

THE

Santhorpe 1772

LIFE and EXPLOITS

Of the ingenious Gentleman

DON QUIXOTE

DE LA MANCHA.

Translated from the ORIGINAL SPANISH of

Miguel Cervantes de Saavedra.

By CHARLES JARVIS, Esq;

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

VOLUME *the* THIRD.

D U B L I N:

Printed for PETER WILSON in *Dame-Street.*

M DCC XLVII.



T A B L E

OF THE

C H A P T E R S.

BOOK the FOURTH.

C H A P. XIX. *In which is finished the notable adventure of the troopers of the holy brotherhood, with the great ferocity of our good knight Don Quixote.*

Page 2

C H A P. XX. *Of the strange and wonderful manner in which Don Quixote de la Mancha was enchanted, with other remarkable occurrences.*

p. 10

C H A P. XXI. *In which the canon prosecutes the subject of the books of chivalry, with other matters worthy of his genius.*

p. 21

C H A P. XXII. *Of the ingenious conference between Sancho Pança and his master Don Quixote.*

p. 29

C H A P. XXIII. *Of the ingenious contest between Don Quixote and the canon, with other accidents.*

p. 37

C H A P. XXIV. *Which treats of what the goatherd related to all those who accompanied Don Quixote.*

p. 44

C H A P. XXV. *Of the quarrel between Don Quixote and the goatherd, with the rare adventure of the disciplinants, which he happily accomplished with the sweat of his brows.*

p. 50

PART II. BOOK the FIRST.

C H A P. I. *Of what passed between the Priest, the Barber, and Don Quixote, concerning his indisposition.*

p. 67

VOL. III.

[A]

CHAP.

TABLE of the CHAPTERS.

- CH A P. II. *Which treats of the notable quarrel between Sancho Pança, and Don Quixote's niece and house-keeper, with other pleasant occurrences.* p. 79
- CH A P. III. *Of the pleasant conversation, which passed between Don Quixote, Sancho Pança and the batchelor Sampson Carrasco.* p. 84
- CH A P. IV. *Wherein Sancho Pança answers the batchelor Sampson Carrasco's doubts and questions, with other incidents worthy to be known and recited.* p. 92
- CH A P. V. *Of the wise and pleasant discourse, which passed between Sancho Pança and his wife Teresa Pança.* p. 98
- CH A P. VI. *Of what passed between Don Quixote, his niece, and house-keeper, and is one of the most important chapters of the whole history.* p. 105
- CH A P. VII. *Of what passed between Don Quixote and his squire, with other most famous occurrences.* p. 111
- CH A P. VIII. *Wherein is related what befel Don Quixote, as he was going to visit his lady Dulcinea del Toboso.* p. 118
- CH A P. IX. *Which relates what will be found in it.* p. 126
- CH A P. X. *Wherein is related the cunning used by Sancho in enchanting the lady Dulcinea, with other events as ridiculous as true.* p. 130
- CH A P. XI. *Of the strange adventure, which befel the valorous Don Quixote, with the wain or cart of the parliament of death.* p. 139
- CH A P. XII. *Of the strange adventure, which befel the valorous Don Quixote with the brave knight of the looking glasses.* p. 145
- CH A P. XIII. *Wherein is continued the adventure of the knight of the wood, with the wise, new, and pleasant dialogue between the two squires.* p. 152
- CH A P. XIV. *In which is continued the adventure of the knight of the wood.* p. 159
- CH A P. XV. *Giving an account, who the knight of the looking-glasses and his squire were.* p. 170
- CH A P. XVI. *Of what befel Don Quixote with a discreet gentleman of La Mancha.* p. 172
- CH A P.

TABLE of the CHAPTERS.

CHAP. XVII. *Wherein is set forth the last and highest point, at which the unheard-of courage of Don Quixote ever did, or could, arrive; with the happy conclusion of the adventure of the lions.* p. 182

BOOK the SECOND.

CHAP. I. *Of what befel Don Quixote in the castle or house of the knight of the green riding-coat, with other extravagant matters.* p. 193

CHAP. II. *Wherein is related the adventure of the enamoured shepherd, with other truly pleasant accidents.* p. 203

CHAP. III. *Giving an account of the wedding of Camacho the rich, with the adventure of Basilius the poor.* p. 210

CHAP. IV. *In which is continued the story of Camacho's wedding, with other delightful accidents.* p. 220

CHAP. V. *Wherein is related the grand adventure of the cave of Montesinos, lying in the heart of La Mancha; to which the valorous Don Quixote gave a happy conclusion.* p. 227

CHAP. VI. *Of the wonderful things, which the unexampled Don Quixote de la Mancha declared he had seen in the deep cave of Montesinos, the greatness and impossibility of which make this adventure pass for apocryphal.* p. 235

CHAP. VII. *In which are recounted a thousand impertinences, necessary to the right understanding of this faithful history.* p. 246

CHAP. VIII. *Wherein is begun the braying adventure, with the pleasant one of the puppet-player, and the memorable divinations of the divining ape.* p. 253

CHAP. IX. *Wherein is continued the pleasant adventure of the puppet-player, with sundry other matters in truth sufficiently good.* p. 263

CHAP. X. *Wherein is related who master Peter and his ape were; with the ill success Don Quixote had in the adventure of the braying, which he finished not as he wished and intended.* p. 272

CHAP.

TABLE of the CHAPTERS.

- CHAP. XI. *Of things, which Ben-engeli says he, who reads them, will know if he reads them with attention.* p. 279
- CHAP. XII. *Of the famous adventure of the enchanted bark.* p. 284
- CHAP. XIII. *Of what befel Don Quixote with a fair huntress.* p. 291
- CHAP. XIV. *Which treats of many and great things.* p. 296
- CHAP. XV. *Of the answer Don Quixote gave to his reprover, with other grave and pleasant events.* p. 305
-



THE

THE
LIFE and EXPLOITS
Of the ingenious GENTLEMAN
DON QUIXOTE
DE LA MANCHA.

BOOK IV. Continued.

CHAPTER XIX.

In which is finished the notable adventure of the troopers of the holy brotherhood, with the great ferocity of our good knight Don Quixote.

WHILE *Don Quixote* was talking at this rate, the priest was endeavouring to persuade the troopers, that *Don Quixote* was out of his wits, as they might easily perceive by what he did, and said, and that they need not give themselves any farther trouble upon that subject; for though they should apprehend and carry him away, they must soon release him as being a madman. To which the officer that had produced the warrant answered; that it was no business of his to judge of *Don Quixote's* madness, but to obey the orders of his superior, and that, when he had once secured him, they might set him free three hundred times if they pleased. For all that, said the priest, for this once you must not take him, nor do I think he will suffer himself to be taken. In effect, the priest said so much, and *Don Quixote* did such extravagancies,

VOL. III. A

travagancies, that the officers must have been more mad than he, had they not discovered his infirmity: and therefore they judged it best to be quiet, and moreover to be mediators for making peace between the barber and *Sancho Pança*, who still continued their scuffle with great rancour. At last they, as officers of justice, compounded the matter, and arbitrated it in such a manner, that both parties rested, if not entirely contented, at least somewhat satisfied; for they exchanged pannels, but not girths nor halters. As for *Mambrino's* helmet, the priest, underhand and unknown to *Don Quixote*, gave eight reals¹ for the bason, and the barber gave him a discharge in full, acquitting him of all fraud from thenceforth and for evermore, amen.

These two quarrels, as being the chief and of the greatest weight, being thus made up, it remained, that three of *Don Louis's* servants should be contented to return home, and leave one of their fellows behind to wait upon him, whithersoever *Don Fernando* pleased to carry him. And as now good luck and better fortune had begun to pave the way, and smooth the difficulties, in favour of the lovers and heroes of the inn, so fortune would carry it quite through, and crown all with prosperous success: for the servants were contented to do as *Don Louis* commanded, whereat *Donna Clara* was so highly pleased, that no body could look in her face without discovering the joy of her heart. *Zoraida*, though she did not understand all she saw, yet grew sad or chearful in conformity to what she observed in their several countenances, especially that of her *Spaniard*, on whom her eyes were fixed, and her soul depended. The inn-keeper, observing what recompence the priest had made the barber, demanded *Don Quixote's* reckoning, with ample satisfaction for the damage done to his skins, and the loss of his wine, swearing, that neither *Rozinante* nor the ass should stir out of the inn, 'till he had paid the uttermost farthing. The priest pacified, and *Don Fernando* paid him all; though the judge very generously offered payment:

and
Four shillings.



and thus they all remained in peace and quietness, and the inn appeared no longer the discord of *Agramante's* camp, as *Don Quixote* had called it, but peace it self, and the very tranquillity of *Octavius Cæsar's* days : and it was the general opinion, that all this was owing to the good intention and great eloquence of the priest, and the incomparable liberality of *Don Fernando*.

Don Quixote, now, finding himself freed, and clear of so many brangles, both of his squire's and his own, thought it was high time to pursue his voyage, and put an end to that grand adventure, whereunto he had been called and elected : and therefore, being thus resolutely determined, he went and kneeled before *Dorothea*, who would not suffer him to speak a word 'till he stood up ; which he did in obedience to her, and said : It is a common saying, fair lady, that *diligence is the mother of good success*, and experience has shewn in many and weighty matters, that the care of the solicitor brings the doubtful suit to a happy issue : but this truth is in nothing more evident than in matters of war, in which expedition and dispatch prevent the designs of the enemy, and carry the victory, before the adversary is in a posture to defend himself. All this I say, high and deserving lady, because our abode in this castle seems to me to be now no longer necessary, and may be so far prejudicial, that we may repent it one day : for who knows but your enemy the giant may, by secret and diligent spies, get intelligence of my coming to destroy him ? and, time giving him opportunity, he may fortify himself in some impregnable castle or fortress, against which my industry and the force of my unwearied arm may little avail. And therefore, sovereign lady, let us prevent, as I have said, his designs by our diligence, and let us depart quickly in the name of good fortune, which you can want no longer than I delay to encounter your enemy. Here *Don Quixote* was silent, and said no more, expecting with great sedateness the answer of the beautiful

A 2

1 Because he shut the temple of *Janus*, the signal of universal peace.

tiful Infanta, who, with an air of grandeur, and in a style accommodated to that of *Don Quixote*, answered in this manner: I am obliged to you, Sir knight, for the inclination you shew to favour me in my great need, like a true knight, whose office and employment it is to succour the orphans and distressed: and heaven grant that your desire and mine be soon accomplished, that you may see there are some grateful women in the world. As to my departure, let it be instantly; for I have no other will but yours: and pray dispose of me entirely at your own pleasure; for she, who has once committed the defence of her person, and the restoration of her dominions, into your hands, must not contradict whatever your wisdom shall direct. In the name of god, quoth *Don Quixote*; since it is so, that a lady humbles herself, I will not lose the opportunity of exalting her, and setting her on the throne of her ancestors. Let us depart instantly; for I am spurred on by the eagerness of my desire and the length of the journey; and they say, *delays are dangerous*. And since heaven has not created, nor hell seen, any danger that can daunt or affright me, *Sancho*, saddle *Rozinante*, and get ready your ass, and her majesty's palfrey; and let us take our leaves of the governor of the castle, and of these nobles, and let us depart hence this instant. *Sancho*, who was present all the while, said, shaking his head from side to side: Ah! master, master, there are more tricks in a town than are dreamt of, with respect to the honourable coifs be it spoken. What tricks can there be to my discredit in any town, or in all the towns in the world, thou bumpkin? said *Don Quixote*. If your worship puts yourself into a passion, answered *Sancho*, I will hold my tongue, and forbear to say what I am bound to tell, as a faithful squire and a dutiful servant ought to his master. Say what you will, replied *Don Quixote*, so your words tend not to making me afraid: if you are afraid, you do but like yourself; and if I am not afraid, I do like myself. Nothing of all this, as I am a sinner to god, answered *Sancho*; only that I am sure
and

and positively certain, that this lady, who calls herself queen of the great kingdom of *Micomicon*, is no more a queen than my mother: for were she what she pretends to be, she would not be nuzzling, at every turn, and in every corner, with somebody that is in the company. *Dorothea's* colour came at what *Sancho* said, it being true indeed that her spouse *Don Fernando*, now and then, by stealth, had snatched with his lips an earnest of that reward his affections deserved: which *Sancho* having espied, he thought this freedom more becoming a lady of pleasure, than a queen of so vast a kingdom. *Dorothea* neither could, nor would answer *Sancho* a word, but let him go on with his discourse, which he did, saying: I say this, Sir, because, supposing that, after we have travelled through thick and thin, and passed many bad nights and worse days, one, who is now solacing himself in this inn, should chance to reap the fruit of our labours, I need be in no haste to saddle *Rozinante*, nor to get the ass and the palfrey ready; for we had better be quiet; and let every drab mind her spinning, and let us go to dinner. Good god! how great was the indignation of *Don Quixote* at hearing his squire speak thus disrespectfully! I say, it was so great, that, with speech stammering, tongue faltering, and living fire darting from his eyes, he said: Scoundrel! designing, unmannerly, ignorant, ill-spoken, foul-mouthed, impudent, murmuring, and backbiting villain! dare you utter such words in my presence, and in the presence of these illustrious ladies? and have you dared to entertain such rude and insolent thoughts in your confused imagination? Avoid my presence, monster of nature, treasury of lies, magazine of deceits, storehouse of rogueries, inventor of mischiefs, publisher of absurdities, and enemy of the respect due to royal personages! Be gone; appear not before me, on pain of my indignation. And in saying this, he arched his brows, puffed his cheeks, stared round about him, and gave a violent stamp with his right foot on the floor; all manifest tokens of the rage locked up in his breast. At whose words and furious gestures *Sancho* was so

frighted, that he would have been glad the earth had opened that instant, and swallowed him up. And he knew not what to do, but to turn his back, and get out of the enraged presence of his master. But the discreet *Dorothea*, who so perfectly understood *Don Quixote's* humour, to pacify his wrath, said: Be not offended, good Sir knight of the sorrowful figure, at the follies your good squire has uttered: for, perhaps, he has not said them without some ground; nor can it be suspected, considering his good understanding and christian conscience, that he would slander, or bear false witness against, any body: and therefore we must believe, without all doubt, as you yourself say, Sir knight, that, since all things in this castle fall out in the way of enchantment, perhaps, I say, *Sancho*, by means of the same diabolical illusion, may have seen what he says he saw, so much to the prejudice of my honour. By the omnipotent god I swear, quoth *Don Quixote*, your grandeur has hit the mark, and some wicked apparition must have appeared to this sinner, and have made him see what it was impossible for him to see by any other way but that of enchantment; for I am perfectly assured of the simplicity and innocence of this unhappy wretch, and that he knows not how to invent a slander on any body. So it is, and so it shall be, said *Don Fernando*: wherefore, Signor *Don Quixote*, you ought to pardon him, and restore him to the bosom of your favour, *sicut erat in principio*, before these illusions turned his brain. *Don Quixote* answered, that he pardoned him; and the priest went for *Sancho*, who came in very humble, and, falling down on his knees, begged his master's hand, who gave it him; and, after he had let him kiss it, he gave him his blessing, saying: Now you will be thoroughly convinced, son *Sancho*, of what I have often told you before, that all things in this castle are done by way of enchantment. I believe so too, quoth *Sancho*, excepting the business of the blanket, which really fell out in the ordinary way. Do not believe it, answered *Don Quixote*; for, were it so, I would have

have revenged you at that time, and even now. But neither could I then, nor can I now, find on whom to revenge the injury. They all desired to know what that business of the blanket was, and the inn-keeper gave them a very circumstantial account of *Sancho Pança's* tossing; at which they were not a little diverted. And *Sancho* would have been no less ashamed, if his master had not assured him afresh that it was all enchantment. And yet *Sancho's* folly never rose so high, as to believe, that it was not downright truth, without any mixture of illusion or deceit, being convinced he had been tossed in the blanket by persons of flesh and blood, and not by imaginary or visionary phantoms, as his master supposed and affirmed.

Two days had already passed since all this illustrious company had been in the inn; and thinking it now time to depart, they contrived how, without giving *Dorothea* and *Don Fernando* the trouble of going back with *Don Quixote* to his village, under pretence of restoring the queen of *Micomicon*, the priest and the barber might carry him as they desired, and endeavour to get him cured of his madness at home. *Don Quixote* was now laid down upon a bed, to repose himself after his late fatigues; and in the mean time they agreed with a waggoner, who chanced to pass by with his team of oxen, to carry him in this manner. They made a kind of cage with poles gratewise, large enough to contain *Don Quixote* at his ease: and immediately *Don Fernando* and his companions, with *Don Louis's* servants, and the officers of the holy brotherhood, together with the inn-keeper, all, by the contrivance and direction of the priest, covered their faces, and disguised themselves, some one way, some another, so as to appear to *Don Quixote* to be quite other creatures than those he had seen in that castle. This being done, with the greatest silence they entered the room where *Don Quixote* lay fast asleep, and not dreaming of any such accident; and laying fast hold of him, they bound him hand and foot, so that, when he awaked with a start, he could not

stir, nor do any thing but look round him, and wonder to see such strange visages about him. And presently he fell into the usual conceit, that his disordered imagination was perpetually presenting to him, believing that all these shapes were goblins of that enchanted castle, and that without all doubt he must be enchanted, since he could not stir, nor defend himself: all precisely as the priest, the projector of this stratagem, fancied it would fall out. *Sancho* alone, of all that were present, was in his perfect senses, and in his own figure; and though he wanted but little of being infected with his master's disease, yet he was not at a loss to know who the counterfeit goblins were, but durst not open his lips, 'till he saw what this surprisal and imprisonment of his master meant. Neither did the knight utter a word, waiting to see the issue of his disgrace: which was, that, bringing the cage thither, they shut him up in it, and nailed the bars so fast, that there was no breaking them open, though you pulled never so hard. They then hoisted him on their shoulders, and, at going out of the room, a voice was heard, as dreadful as the barber could form (not he of the pannel, but the other) saying; *O knight of the sorrowful figure!* let not the confinement you are under afflict you; for it is expedient it should be so, for the more speedy accomplishment of the adventure, in which your great valour has engaged you: which shall be finished when the furious *Manchegan* lion shall be coupled with the white *Tobosan* dove, after having submitted their stately necks to the soft matrimonial yoke; from which unheard-of conjunction shall spring into the light of the world brave whelps, who shall imitate the tearing claws of their valorous sire. And this shall come to pass before the pursuer of the fugitive nymph shall have made two rounds, to visit the bright constellations, in his rapid and natural course. And thou, O the most noble and obedient squire that ever had sword in belt, beard on face, and smell in nostrils, be not dismayed nor afflicted to see the flower of knight-errantry carried thus away before your eyes. For ere long, if it so please the fabricator

tor of the world, you shall see yourself so exalted and sublimated, that you shall not know yourself, and shall not be defrauded of the promises made you by your noble lord. And I assure you, in the name of the sage *Fibberoniana*¹, that your wages shall be punctually paid you, as you shall see in effect: follow therefore the footsteps of the valorous and enchanted knight; for it is expedient for you to go where ye may both rest: and because I am permitted to say no more, god be with you; for I return I well know whither. And, at finishing the prophecy, he raised his voice very high, and then sunk it by degrees with so soft an accent, that even they, who were in the secret of the jest, were almost ready to believe, that what they heard was true.

Don Quixote remained much comforted by the prophecy he had heard; for he presently apprehended the whole signification thereof, and saw that it promised he should be joined in holy and lawful wedlock with his beloved *Dulcinea del Toboso*, from whose happy womb should issue the whelps, his sons, to the everlasting honour of *La Mancha*. And, with this firm persuasion, he raised his voice, and, fetching a deep sigh, he said: O thou, whoever thou art, who hast prognosticated me so much good, I beseech thee to entreat, on my behalf, the sage enchanter, who has the charge of my affairs, that he suffer me not to perish in this prison, wherein I am now carried, 'till I see accomplished those joyous and incomparable promises now made me: for, so they come to pass, I shall account the pains of my imprisonment glory, the chains, with which I am bound, refreshment, and this couch, whereon I am laid, not a hard field of battle, but a soft bridal bed of downe. And, as touching the consolation of *Sancho Pança* my squire, I trust in his goodness and integrity, that he will not forsake me, either in good or evil fortune. And though it should fall out, through his or my hard hap, that I should not be able to give him the island, or something else equivalent,

A 5.

¹ An equivalent word to the original *Mentironiana*, which needs no explanation.

10 *The LIFE and EXPLOITS of*

valent, that I have promised him, at least he cannot lose his wages ; for in my will, which is already made, I have declared what shall be given him, not indeed proportionable to his many and good services, but according to my own poor ability. *Sancho Pança* bowed with great respect, and kissed both his master's hands ; for one alone he could not, they being both tied together. Then the goblins took the cage on their shoulders, and placed it on the waggon.

C H A P. XX.

Of the strange and wonderful manner in which Don Quixote de la Mancha was enchanted, with other remarkable occurrences.

DON QUIXOTE, finding himself cooped up in this manner, and placed upon a cart, said : Many and most grave histories have I read of knights-errant ; but I never read, saw, or heard of enchanted knights being carried away after this manner, and so slowly as these lazy, heavy animals seem to promise. For they always used to be carried through the air with wonderful speed, wrapped up in some thick and dark cloud, or in some chariot of fire, or mounted upon a hippogrif, or some such beast. But to be carried upon a team drawn by oxen, by the living god it puts me into confusion. But, perhaps, the chivalry and enchantments of these our times may have taken a different turn from those of the antients ; and perhaps also, as I am a new knight in the world, and the first who have revived the long-forgotten exercise of knight-errantry, there may have been lately invented other kinds of enchantments, and other methods of carrying away those that are enchanted. What think you of this, son *Sancho* ? I do not know what I think, answered *Sancho*, not being so well read as your worship in scriptures-errant. Yet I dare affirm and swear, that these hobgoblins here about us are not altogether catholic. Catholic ! my father ! answered *Don Quixote* ; how can they be catholic, being devils, who have assumed

assumed fantastick shapes on purpose to come and put me into this state? and if you would be convinced of this, touch them, and feel them, and you will find they have no bodies but of air, consisting in nothing but appearance only. Before god, Sir, replied *Sancho*, I have already touched them, and this devil, who is so very busy here about us, is as plump as a partridge, and has another property very different from what people say your devils are wont to have: for it is said, they all smell of brimstone, and other worse scents; but this spark smells of amber at half a league's distance. *Sancho* meant this of *Don Fernando*, who, being a cavalier of such quality, must have wore perfumes, as *Sancho* hinted. Wonder not at it, friend *Sancho*, answered *Don Quixote*; for you must know that the devils are a knowing sort of people; and, supposing they do carry perfumes about them, they have no scents in themselves, because they are spirits; or, if they do smell, it can be of nothing that is good, but of something bad and stinking; and the reason is, because, let them be where they will, they carry their hell about them, and can receive no kind of ease from their torments: now, a perfume being delightful and pleasing, it is not possible they should smell of so good a thing: and if you think that this devil smells of amber, either you deceive yourself, or he would deceive you, that you may not take him for a devil. All this discourse passed between the master and the man; and *Don Fernando* and *Cardenio*, fearing lest *Sancho* should smell out their plot, he being already in the pursuit, and pretty far advanced towards it, they resolved to hasten their departure, and, calling the inn-keeper aside, they ordered him to saddle *Rozinante* and pannel the ass, which he did with great expedition.

In the mean while the priest had agreed, for so much a day, with the troopers of the holy brotherhood, that they should accompany *Don Quixote* home to his village. *Cardenio* took care to hang the buckle on one side, and the bason on the other, of the pommel of *Rozinante's* saddle, and made signs to *Sancho* to mount his ass, and take *Rozinante* by the bridle,
and

and placed two troopers with their carabines on each side of the waggon. But before the car moved forward, the hostess, her daughter, and *Maritornes*, came out to take their leaves of *Don Quixote*, pretending to shed tears for grief at his misfortune; to whom *Don Quixote* said: Weep not, my good ladies; for these kind of mishaps are incident to those, who profess what I profess; and if such calamities did not befall me, I should not take myself for a knight-errant of any considerable fame: for such accidents as these never happen to knights of little name and reputation, since no body in the world thinks of them at all: but to the valorous indeed they often fall out; for many princes, and other knights, envious of their extraordinary virtue and courage, are constantly endeavouring by indirect ways to destroy them. Notwithstanding all which, so powerful is virtue, that of herself alone, in spite of all the necromancy that its first inventor *Zoroaster* ever knew, she will come off victorious from every encounter, and spread her lustre round the world, as the sun does over the heavens. Pardon me, fair ladies, if I have, through inadvertency, done you any displeasure; for willingly and knowingly I never offended any body: and pray to god, that he would deliver me from these bonds, into which some evil-minded enchanter has thrown me; for, if ever I find myself at liberty, I shall not forget the favours you have done me in this castle, but shall acknowledge and requite them as they deserve.

While the ladies of the castle were thus entertained by *Don Quixote*, the priest and the barber took their leave of *Don Fernando* and his companions, and of the captain and his brother the judge, and of all the now happy ladies, especially of *Dorothea* and *Lucinda*. They all embraced, promising to give each other an account of their future fortunes. *Don Fernando* gave the priest directions where to write to him, and acquaint him with what became of *Don Quixote*, assuring him that nothing would afford him a greater pleasure, than to know it; and that, on his part, he would inform him
of

of whatever might amuse or please him, either in relation to his own marriage, or the baptizing of *Zoraida*, as also concerning *Don Louis's* success, and *Lucinda's* return to her parents. The priest promised to perform all that was desired of him with the utmost punctuality. They again embraced, and renewed their mutual offers of service. The inn-keeper came to the priest, and gave him some papers, telling him, he had found them in the lining of the wallet, in which the novel of the *Curious Impertinent* was found, and, since the owner had never come back that way, he might take them all with him ; for, as he could not read, he had no desire to keep them. The priest thanked him, and, opening the papers ¹, found at the head of them this title, *The novel of Rinconete and Cortadillo* ; from whence he concluded it must be some tale, and imagined, because that of the *Curious Impertinent* was a good one, this must be so too, it being probable they were both written by the same author : and therefore he kept it with a design to read it when he had an opportunity. Then he and his friend the barber mounted on horseback, with their masks on, that *Don Quixote* might not know them, and placed themselves behind the waggon ; and the order of the cavalcade was this. First marched the car, guided by the owner ; on each side went the troopers with their firelocks, as has been already said ; then followed *Sancho* upon his ass, leading *Roxinante* by the bridle : the priest and the barber brought up the rear on their puissant mules, and their faces masked, with a grave and solemn air, marching no faster than the slow pace of the oxen allowed. *Don Quixote* sat in his cage, with his hands tied and his legs stretched out, leaning against the bars, with as much patience and silence, as if he had not been a man of flesh and blood, but a statue of stone. And thus, with the same slowness and silence, they travelled about two leagues, when they came to a valley, which the waggoner thought a convenient place for resting and baiting his cattle ; and acquainting the priest with his purpose,

¹ Written by *Cervantes* himself, and extant in the collection of his *Novels*.

pose; the barber was of opinion, they should travel a little further, telling them, that, behind a rising ground not far off, there was a vale that afforded more and much better grass, than that in which they had a mind to stop. They took the barber's advice, and so went on.

Now the priest, happening to turn his head about, perceived behind them about six or seven horsemen, well mounted and accoutered, who soon came up with them; for they travelled, not with the flegm and slowness of the oxen, but as persons mounted on ecclesiastic mules, and in haste to arrive quickly, and pass the heat of the day in the inn, which appeared not to be a league off. The speedy overtook the slow, and the companies saluted each other courteously; and one of the travellers, who, in short, was a canon of *Toledo*, and master of the rest, observing the orderly procession of the waggon, the troopers, *Sancho*, *Rozinante*, the priest, and the barber, and especially *Don Quixote* caged-up and imprisoned, could not forbear enquiring what was the meaning of carrying that man in that manner; though he already guessed, by seeing the badges of the holy brotherhood, that he must be some notorious robber, or other criminal, the punishment of whom belonged to that fraternity. One of the troopers, to whom the question was put, answered thus: Sir, if you would know the meaning of this gentleman's going in this manner, let him tell you himself; for we know nothing of the matter. *Don Quixote* overheard the discourse, and said: If, perchance, gentlemen, you are versed and skilled in matters of chivalry, I will acquaint you with my misfortunes; but if not, I need not trouble myself to recount them. By this time the priest and the barber, perceiving the travellers were in discourse with *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, were come close up, to be ready to give such an answer, as might prevent the discovery of their plot. The canon, in answer to what *Don Quixote* said, replied: In truth, brother, I am more conversant in books of chivalry, than in *Villalpando's Summaries*; so that, if that be all, you may safely

safely communicate to me whatever you please. With
 heaven's permission, replied *Don Quixote*, since it is
 so, you must understand, Signor cavalier, that I am
 enchanted in this cage, through the envy and fraud of
 wicked necromancers; for virtue is more persecuted
 by the wicked, than beloved by the good. A knight-
 errant I am, not one of those, whose names fame has
 forgot to eternize, but one of those, who, maugre
 and in despite of envy itself, and of all the magicians
Persia ever bred, the *Bracmans* of *India*, and the gym-
 nosophists of *Ethiopia*, shall enroll his name in the
 temple of immortality, to serve as an example and
 mirror to future ages, in which knights-errant may
 see the track they are to follow, if they are ambitious
 of reaching the honourable summit and pinnacle of
 arms. Signor *Don Quixote de la Mancha* says the
 truth, quoth the priest at this time; for he goes en-
 charned in this waggon, not through his own fault or
 demerit, but through the malice of those, to whom
 virtue is odious, and courage offensive. This, Sir, is
 the *knight of the sorrowful figure*, if ever you have
 heard him spoken of, whose valorous exploits and he-
 roic deeds shall be written on solid brass and everlast-
 ing marble, though envy take never so much pains to
 obscure them, and malice to conceal them. When
 the canon heard him that was imprisoned, and him at
 liberty, both talk in such a style, he was ready to cross
 himself with amazement, not being able to imagine
 what had befallen him; and all his followers were in
 equal admiration.

Now *Sancho*, being come up to them, and over-
 hearing their discourse, to set all to rights, said: Look
 ye, gentlemen, let it be well or ill taken, I will out
 with it: the truth of the case is, my master *Don Quix-
 ote* is just as much enchanted as my mother; he is in
 his perfect senses, he eats, and drinks, and does his
 occasions like other men, and as he did yesterday be-
 fore they cooped him up. This being so, will you
 persuade me he is enchanted? have I not heard many
 people say, that persons enchanted neither eat, sleep,
 nor speak? and my master, if no body thwarts him,
 will

will talk ye more than thirty barristers. And turning his eyes on the priest, he went on saying; Ah master priest, master priest, do you think I do not know you? and think you I do not perceive and guess what these new enchantments drive at? let me tell you, I know you, though you disguise your face never so much; and I would have you to know, I understand you, though you manage your contrivances never so slyly. In short, virtue cannot live where envy reigns, nor liberality subsist with niggardliness. Evil beset the devil! had it not been for your reverence, my master had been married by this time to the Infanta *Micomicona*, and I had been an earl at least; for I could expect no less, as well from the generosity of my master the *knight of the sorrowful figure*, as from the greatness of my services. But I find the proverb true, that *the wheel of fortune turns swifter than a mill-wheel*, and they, who were yesterday at the top, are to-day on the ground. I am grieved for my poor wife and children; for, when they might reasonably expect to see their father come home a governor or viceroy of some island or kingdom, they will now see him return a mere groom. All this that I have said, master priest, is only intended to put your paternity in mind to make a conscience of the evil treatment of my master; and take heed that god does not call you to an account in the next life for this imprisonment of my lord, and require at your hands all those succours, and all the good he might have done, during this time of his confinement. Snuff me these candles, quoth the barber at this juncture; what! *Sancho*, are you also of your master's confraternity? as god shall save me, I begin to think you are likely to keep him company in the cage, and to be as much enchanted as he, for your share of his humour and his chivalry. In an evil hour were you with child by his promises, and in an evil hour the island you so long for entered into your pate. I am not with child by any body, answered *Sancho*, nor am I a man to suffer myself to be got with child by the best king that may be; and though I am a poor man, I am an old christian, and owe no
body.

body any thing; and if I covet islands, there are others who covet worse things; and every one is the son of his own works; and, being a man, I may come to be pope, and much more easily governor of an island, especially since my master may win so many, that he may be at a loss on whom to bestow them. Pray, master barber, take heed what you say; for shaving of beards is not all, and there is some difference between *Pedro* and *Pedro*. I say this, because we know one another, and there is no putting false dice upon me: as for my master's enchantment, god knows the truth, and let that rest; for it is the worse for stirring. The barber would not answer *Sancho*, lest, by his simplicity, he should discover what he and the priest took so much pains to conceal: and for the same reason the priest desired the canon to get on a little before, and he would let him into the secret of the encaged gentleman, with other particulars that would divert him. The canon did so, and rode on before with his servants, listening to all the priest had to tell him of the quality, manner of life, and customs of *Don Quixote*; recounting to him briefly the beginning and cause of his distraction, with the whole progress of his adventures, to the putting him into that cage, and the design they had to carry him home, and try if by any means they might find a cure for his madness. The servants admired afresh, and the canon also, to hear the strange history of *Don Quixote*; and when he had heard it all, he said to the priest: Truly, Sir, I am convinced, that those they call books of chivalry are prejudicial to the common-weal; and though, led away by an idle and false taste, I have read the beginning of almost all that are printed, I could never prevail with myself to read any of them from the beginning to the end, because to me they appear to be all of the same stamp, and this to have no more in it than that, nor that than the other. And, in my opinion, this kind of writing and composition falls under the denomination of the fables they call *Milesian*, which are extravagant stories, tending only to please, and not to instruct; quite contrary to the moral fables,

bles, which at the same time both delight and instruct. And though the principal end of such books is to please, I know not how they can attain it, being stuffed with so many and such monstrous absurdities. For the pleasure, which is conceived in the mind, must proceed from the beauty and harmony it sees or contemplates in the things, which the sight or the imagination sets before it, and nothing, in itself ugly or deformed, can afford any real satisfaction. For what beauty can there be, or what proportion of the parts to the whole, and of the whole to the parts, in a book or fable, in which a youth of sixteen years hews down with his sword a giant as big as a steeple, and splits him in two, as if he were made of paste? And when they would give us a description of a battle, after having said, that, on the enemies side, there are a million of combatants, let but the hero of the book be against them, we must, of necessity and in despite of our teeth, believe that such or such a knight carried the victory, by the single valour of his strong arm. Then, what shall we say to that facility, with which a queen or an empress throws herself into the arms of this errant and unknown knight? What genius, not wholly barbarous and uncultivated, can be satisfied with reading, that a vast tower, full of knights, scuds through the sea, like a ship before the wind, and this night is in *Lombardy*, and the next morning in the country of *Prester John* in the *Indies*, or in some other, that *Ptolemy* never discovered, nor *Marcus Ptolus*¹ ever saw? And if it should be answered, that the authors of such books write them professedly as lyes, and therefore are not obliged to stand upon niceties, or truth; I answer, that fiction is so much the better, by how much the nearer it resembles truth; and pleases so much the more, by how much the more it has of the doubtful and possible. Fables should be suited to the reader's understanding, and so contrived, that by facilitating the impossible, lowering the vast,

and

¹ Who, in the twelfth century, travelled, or pretended so, from *Persia*, through *Tartary*, into *China*; and gives an account of all the continent, and islands, to the south and east of *Asia*.

and keeping the mind in suspense, they may, at once, surprize, delight, amuse, and entertain in such sort, that admiration and pleasure may be united, and go hand in hand: all which cannot be performed by him, who pays no regard to probability and imitation, in which the perfection of writing consists: and I have never yet seen any book of chivalry, which makes a compleat body of fable with all its members, so that the middle corresponds to the beginning, and the end to the beginning and middle: on the contrary, they are composed of so many members, that the authors seem rather to design a chimæra or monster, than to intend a well-proportioned figure. Besides all this, their style is harsh, their exploits incredible, their amours lascivious, their civility impertinent, their battles tedious, their reasonings foolish, and their voyages extravagant; and lastly, they are devoid of all ingenious artifice, and therefore deserve to be banished the christian common-wealth, as an unprofitable race of people.

The priest listened to him with great attention, and took him to be a man of good understanding, and in the right in all he said; and therefore he told him, that, being of the same opinion, and bearing an old grudge to books of chivalry, he had burnt all those belonging to *Don Quixote*, which were not a few. Then he gave him an account of the scrutiny he had made, telling him, which of them he had condemned to the fire, and which he had reprieved: at which the canon laughed heartily, and said, notwithstanding all the ill he had spoken of such books, he found one thing good in them, which was, the subject they presented for a good genius to display itself, affording a large and ample field, in which the pen may expatiate without any let or incumbrance, describing shipwrecks, tempests, encounters, and battles; delineating a valiant captain with all the qualifications requisite to make him such, shewing his prudence in preventing the stratagems of his enemy, his eloquence in persuading or dissuading his soldiers; mature in council, prompt in execution, equally brave in expecting
as

as in attacking the enemy : sometimes painting a sad and tragical accident, then a joyful and unexpected event ; here a most beautiful lady, modest, discreet, and reserved ; there a christian knight, valiant and courteous ; now an unruly and barbarous braggadocio ; then an affable, valiant, and good-natured prince : describing the goodness and loyalty of subjects, the greatness and generosity of nobles : then again he may shew himself an excellent astronomer or geographer, a musician, or a statesman ; and, some time or other, he may have an opportunity, if he pleases, of shewing himself a necromancer. He may set forth the subtilty of *Ulysses*, the piety of *Æneas*, the bravery of *Achilles*, the misfortunes of *Hector*, the treachery of *Sinon*, the friendship of *Euryalus*, the liberality of *Alexander*, the valour of *Cæsar*, the clemency and probity of *Trajan*, the fidelity of *Zopyrus*, the wisdom of *Cato*, and finally all those actions, which may serve to make an illustrious person perfect ; sometimes placing them in one person alone, then dividing them among many : and this being done in a smooth and agreeable style, and with ingenious invention, approaching as near as possible to truth, will, doubtless, weave a web of such various and beautiful contexture, that, when it is finished, the perfection and excellency thereof may attain to the ultimate end of writing, that is, both to instruct and delight, as I have already said : because the unconfined way of writing these books gives an author room to shew his skill in the epic or lyric, in tragedy or comedy, with all the parts included in the sweet and charming sciences of poetry and oratory : for the epic may be written as well in prose as in verse ¹.

C H A P.

¹ The archbishop of *Cambray* might, probably, write his *Tele-machus* upon this hint : at least it is an example of this assertion.

C H A P. XXI.

In which the canon prosecutes the subject of books of chivalry, with other matters worthy of his genius.

IT is just as you say, Sir, quoth the priest to the canon; and for this reason those, who have hitherto composed such books, are the more to blame, proceeding, as they do, without any regard to good sense, or art, or to those rules, by the observation of which they might become as famous in prose, as the two princes of the *Greek* and *Latin* poetry are in verse. I myself, replied the canon, was once tempted to write a book of knight-errantry, in which I purposed to observe all the restrictions I have mentioned; and, to confess the truth, I had gone through above a hundred sheets of it; and, to try whether they answered my own opinion of them, I communicated them to some learned and judicious persons, who were very fond of this kind of reading, and to other persons, who were ignorant, and regarded only the pleasure of reading extravagancies; and I met with a kind approbation from all of them: nevertheless I would proceed no farther, as well in regard that I looked upon it as a thing foreign to my profession, as because the number of the unwise is greater than that of the prudent: and though it is better to be praised by the few wise men, than mocked by a multitude of fools, yet I am unwilling to expose myself to the confused judgment of the giddy vulgar, to whose lot the reading such books for the most part falls. But that which chiefly moved me to lay it aside, and to think no more of finishing it, was, an argument I formed to myself, deduced from the modern comedies that are daily represented, saying: If those now-a-days in fashion, whether fictitious or historical, all, or most of them, are known absurdities, and things without head or tail, and yet the vulgar take a pleasure in listening to them, and maintain and approve them

them for good; and the authors who compose, and the actors who represent them, say, such they must be, because the people will have them so, and no otherwise; and those, which are regular, and carry on the plot according to the rules of art, serve only for half a score men of sense, who understand them, while all the rest are at a loss, and can make nothing of the contrivance; and, for their part, it is better for them to get bread by the many, than reputation by the few: thus, probably, it would have fared with my book, after I had burnt my eye-brows with poring to follow the aforesaid precepts, and I should have got nothing but my labour for my pains ¹. And though I have often endeavoured to convince the actors of their mistake, and that they would draw more company, and gain more credit, by acting plays written according to art, than by such ridiculous pieces, they are so attached and wedded to their own opinion, that no reason, nor even demonstration, can wrest it from them. I remember that, talking one day to one of these headstrong fellows, Tell me, said I, do you not remember, that, a few years ago, there were three tragedies acted in *Spain*, composed by a famous poet of this kingdom, which were such, that they surprized, delighted, and raised the admiration of all who saw them, as well the ignorant as the judicious, as well the vulgar as better sort; and that these alone got the players more money than any thirty of the best that have been written since? Doubtless, answered the actor I speak of, your worship means the *Isabella*, *Phyllis*, and *Alexandra*. The same, replied I; and pray see, whether they did not carefully observe the rules of art, and whether that hindered them from appearing what they really were, and from pleasing all the world. So that the fault is not in the people's coveting absurdities, but in those, who know not how to exhibit any thing better. For there

¹ Literally, I should have been like the taylor at the street-corner. The proverb entire is, *Ser como el sastre de la encrucixada, que cõsia de valde, y ponía el hilo de su casa.* That is, *To be like the taylor of the cross-way, who sewed for nothing, and found thread himself.*

there is nothing absurd in the play of *Ingratitude revenged*, nor in the *Numantia*; nor can you find any in the *Merchant-lover*, much less in the *Favourable she-enemy*, and in some others, composed by ingenious and judicious poets, to their own fame and renown, and to the advantage of those who acted them. And to these I added other reasons, at which I fancied he was somewhat confounded, but not convinced nor satisfied, so as to make him retract his erroneous opinion.

Signor canon, said then the priest, you have touched upon a subject, which has awakened in me an old grudge I bear to the comedies now in vogue, equal to that I have against books of chivalry: for, whereas comedy, according to the opinion of *Cicero*, ought to be a mirror of human life, an exemplar of manners, and an image of truth, those that are represented now-a-days are mirrors of inconsistency, patterns of folly, and images of wantonness. For what greater absurdity can there be in the subject we are treating of, than for a child to appear, in the first scene of the first act, in swadling-clothes, and in the second enter a grown man with a beard? and what can be more ridiculous, than to draw the character of an old man valiant, a young man a coward, a footman a rhetorician, a page a privy-counsellor, a king a water-carrier, and a princess a scullion? Then what shall we say to their observance of the time and place, in which the actions they represent are supposed to have happened? I have seen a comedy, the first act of which was laid in *Europe*, the second in *Asia*, and the third in *Africa*; and, had there been four acts¹, the fourth would doubtless have concluded in *America*; and so the play would have taken in all the four parts of the world. If imitation be the principal thing required in comedy, how is it possible any tolerable understanding can endure to see an action, which passed in the time of king *Pepin* or *Charlemain*, ascribed to the emperor *Heraclius*, who is introduced carrying the cross into *Jerusalem*, or recovering

¹ Note, the *Spanish* plays consist of but three acts. *Cervantes* himself, as *Don Gregorio* tells us in his *Life*, reduced them from five to three, and, instead of *acts*, called them *days*, *jornadas*.

vering the holy sepulchre, like *Godfrey of Bouillon*; numberless years having passed between these actions; and besides, the comedy being grounded upon a fiction, to see truths applied out of history, with a mixture of facts relating to different persons and times; and all this with no appearance of probability, but, on the contrary, full of manifest and altogether inexcusable errors? But the worst of it is, that some are so besotted, as to call this perfection, and to say, that all besides is meer pedantry. If we come to the comedies upon divine subjects, what a pack of false miracles do they invent, how many apocryphal and ill-understood, ascribing to one saint the miracles of another? And even in the plays upon profane subjects, the authors take upon them to work miracles, for no other reason in the world, but because they think such a miracle will do well, and make a figure in such a place, that ignorant people may admire, and be induced to see the comedy. Now all this is to the prejudice of truth, and discredit of history, and even to the reproach of our *Spanish* wits: for foreigners, who observe the laws of comedy with great punctuality, take us for barbarous and ignorant, seeing the absurdities and extravagancies of those we write. It would not be a sufficient excuse to say, that the principal intent of well-governed commonwealths, in permitting stage-plays to be acted, is, that the populace may be entertained with some innocent recreation, to divert, at times, the ill humours, which idleness is wont to produce; and, since this end may be attained by any play, whether good or bad, there is no need of prescribing laws, or confining those, who write or act them, to the strict rules of composition, since, as I have said, any of them serve to compass the end proposed by them. To this I would answer, that this end is, beyond all comparison, much better attained by those that are good, than by those that are not so: for the hearer, after attending to an artful and well-contrived play, would go away diverted by what is witty, instructed by what is serious, in admiration at the incidents, improved by the reasoning, forewarned by the frauds, made wise by the examples, incensed against

against vice, and in love with virtue: for a good comedy will awaken all these passions in the mind of the hearer, let him be never so gross or stupid. And, of all impossibilities, it is the most impossible not to be pleased, entertained, and satisfied much more with that comedy, which has all these requisites, than by one, which is defective in them, as most of our comedies now-a-days are. Nor is this abuse to be charged chiefly on the poets themselves: for there are some among them, who know very well wherein they err, and are perfectly acquainted with what they ought to do: but, as plays are made a saleable commodity, they say, and they say right, that the actors would not buy them, if they were not of that stamp; and therefore the poet endeavours to accommodate himself to what is required by the player, who is to pay him for his work. And that this is the truth, may be evinced by the infinite number of Plays composed by a most happy genius of these kingdoms ¹, with so much sprightliness, such elegant verse, expressions so good, and such excellent sentiments, and lastly with such richness of elocution, and loftiness of style, that the world resounds with his fame. Yet, by his sometimes adapting himself to the taste of the actors, they have not all reached that point of perfection that some of them ² have done. Others, in writing plays, so little consider what they are doing, that the actors are often under a necessity of absconding for fear of being punished, as has frequently happened, for having acted things to the prejudice of the crown, or the dishonour of families. But all these inconveniencies, and many more I have not mentioned, would cease, if some intelligent and judicious person of the court were appointed to examine all plays before they are acted ³, not only those made about the court, but

¹ *Lopez de Vega Carpio.*

² *Lopez* himself, in his *New art of making comedies, &c.* tells us of but *six* plays, to which he had given the requisite perfection; a very small number in comparison of 483, which he himself tells us he had then written.

³ This is the period of licensing plays in *Spain*, occasioned, it is said, by this Reflexion of our author's,

26 *The LIFE and EXPLOITS of*

all that should be acted throughout all *Spain*; without whose approbation under hand and seal, the civil officers should suffer no play to be acted: and thus the comedians would be obliged to send all their plays to the court, and might then act them with entire safety; and the writers of them would take more care and pains about what they did, knowing their performances must pass the rigorous examination of somebody that understands them. By this method good plays would be written, and the design of them happily attained, namely, the entertainment of the people, the reputation of the wits of *Spain*, the interest and security of the players, and the saving the magistrate the trouble of chastising them. And if some other, or the same person, were commissioned to examine the books of chivalry that shall be written for the future, without doubt some might be published with all the perfection you speak of, enriching our language with the pleasing and precious treasure of eloquence, and might cause the old books to be laid aside, being obscured by the lustre of the new ones, which would come out, for the innocent amusement not only of the idle, but also of those who have most business; for the bow cannot possibly stand always bent, nor can human nature or human frailty subsist without some lawful recreation.

Thus far had the canon and the priest proceeded in their dialogue, when the barber, coming up to them, said to the priest: Here, Signor licenciado, is the place, I told you was proper for us to pass the heat of the day in, and where the cattle would have fresh grass in abundance. I think so too, answered the priest; and acquainting the canon with his intention, he also would stay with them, invited by the beauty of a pleasant valley, which presented itself to their view: and therefore, that he might enjoy the pleasure of the place and the conversation of the priest, of whom he began to be fond, and be informed likewise more particularly of *Don Quixote's* exploits, he ordered some of his servants to go to the inn, which was not far off, and bring from thence what they could find to eat for the whole company;

company; for he resolved to stay there that afternoon. To whom one of the servants answered, that the sumpter-mule, which by that time must have reached the inn, carried provisions enough for them all, and that they need take nothing at the inn but barley. Since it is so, said the canon, take thither the other mules, and bring back the sumpter hither.

While this passed, *Sancho*, perceiving he might talk to his master without the continual presence of the priest and the barber, whom he looked upon as suspicious persons, came up to his master's cage, and said to him: Sir, to disburthen my conscience, I must tell you something about this enchantment of yours; and it is this, that they, who are riding along with us, and with their faces covered, are the priest and the barber of our town; and I fancy they have played you this trick, and are carrying you in this manner, out of the pure envy they bear you for surpassing them in famous atchievements: and supposing this to be true, it follows that you are not enchanted, but gulled and besotted; for proof whereof I would ask you one thing, and if you answer me, as I believe you must, you shall lay your finger upon this palpable cheat, and find, that you are not enchanted but distracted. Ask whatever you will, son *Sancho*, answered *Don Quixote*; for I will satisfy you, and answer to your whole will. But as to what you tell me, that those yonder, who come with us, are the priest and the barber, our townsmen and acquaintance, it may very easily be, they may seem to be so; but that they are so really and in effect, do not believe it in any wise. What you ought to understand and believe, is, that, if they seem to be those you say, it must be, that they, who have enchanted me, have assumed that appearance and likeness: for enchanters can easily take what form they please, and may have taken that of our two friends, in order to make you think as you do, and to involve you in such a labyrinth of imaginations, that you shall not be able to find your way out though you had *Theseus's* clue. Besides, they may have done it to make me also waver in my judgment, and not be able to guess from what quarter this injury

B 2

comes.

comes. For if, on the one side, you tell me, that the priest and the barber of our village bear us company, and, on the other side, I find myself locked up in a cage, and know of myself, that no force but that which is supernatural could be sufficient to imprison me; what can I say or think, but that the manner of my enchantment exceeds all I have ever read of in the histories of knights-errant that have been enchanted? So that you may set your heart at rest as to their being what you say; for they are just as much so, as I am a *Turk*. As to what concerns your asking me questions, ask them; for I will answer you, though you should continue asking from this time 'till to-morrow morning. Blessed virgin! answered *Sancho*, raising his voice, and is it then possible your worship can be so thick-skulled and devoid of brains, that you cannot perceive what I tell you to be the very truth, and that there is more roguery than enchantment in this confinement and disgrace of yours? and seeing it is so, I will prove most evidently that you are really not enchanted. Now tell me, as god shall save you from this storm, and as you hope to find yourself in my lady *Dulcinea*'s arms, when you least think of it — Cease conjuring me, said *Don Quixote*, and ask what questions you will; for I have already told you, I will answer them with the utmost punctuality. That is what I would have you do, replied *Sancho*, and what I have a mind to know is, that you tell me, without adding or diminishing a tittle, and with all truth and candour, as is expected from, and practised by, all who profess the exercise of arms, as your worship does, under the title of knights-errant — I tell you I will lye in nothing, answered *Don Quixote*: therefore make either a beginning or an end of asking; for, in truth, you tire me out with so many salvos, postulatums, and preparatives, *Sancho*. I say, replied *Sancho*, that I am fully satisfied of the goodness and veracity of my master, and, that being to the purpose in our affair, I ask, with respect be it spoken, whether, since your being cooped up, or, as you say, enchanted, in this cage, your worship has not had an inclination to open the greater or the lesser

leffer sluices, as people are wont to say? I do not understand, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, what you mean by opening sluices: explain yourself, if you would have me give you a direct answer. Is it possible, quoth *Sancho*, your worship should not understand that phrase, when the very children at school are weaned with it? Know then, it means, whether you have not had a mind to do what nobody can do for you? Ay, now I comprehend you, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*; and, in truth, I have often had such a mind, and have at this very instant: help me out of this streight; for I doubt all is not so clean as it should be.

C H A P. XXII.

Of the ingenious conference between Sancho Pança and his master Don Quixote.

HA! quoth *Sancho*, now I have caught you: this is what I longed to know with all my heart and soul. Come on, Sir, can you deny what is commonly said every where, when a person is in the dumps; I know not what such or such a one ails; he neither eats, nor drinks, nor sleeps, nor answers to the purpose when he is asked a question; he looks for all the world as if he were enchanted. From whence it is concluded, that they, who do not eat, nor drink, nor sleep, nor perform the natural actions I speak of, such only are enchanted, and not they, who have such calls as your worship has, and who eat and drink when they can get it, and answer to all that is asked them. You say right, *Sancho*, answered *Don Quixote*: but I have already told you, that there are sundry sorts of enchantments, and it may have so fallen out, that, in process of time, they may have been changed from one to another, and that now it may be the fashion for those, who are enchanted, to do as I do, though formerly they did not: so that there is no arguing, nor drawing consequences, against the custom of the times. I know, and am verily persuaded, that I am enchanted; and that is sufficient for the discharge of my conscience,

comes. For if, on the one side, you tell me, that the priest and the barber of our village bear us company, and, on the other side, I find myself locked up in a cage, and know of myself, that no force but that which is supernatural could be sufficient to imprison me; what can I say or think, but that the manner of my enchantment exceeds all I have ever read of in the histories of knights-errant that have been enchanted? So that you may set your heart at rest as to their being what you say; for they are just as much so, as I am a *Turk*. As to what concerns your asking me questions, ask them; for I will answer you, though you should continue asking from this time 'till to-morrow morning. Blessed virgin! answered *Sancho*, raising his voice, and is it then possible your worship can be so thick-skulled and devoid of brains, that you cannot perceive what I tell you to be the very truth, and that there is wore roguery than enchantment in this confinement and disgrace of yours? and seeing it is so, I will prove most evidently that you are really not enchanted. Now tell me, as god shall save you from this storm, and as you hope to find yourself in my lady *Dulcinea's* arms, when you least think of it——Cease conjuring me, said *Don Quixote*, and ask what questions you will; for I have already told you, I will answer them with the utmost punctuality. That is what I would have you do, replied *Sancho*, and what I have a mind to know is, that you tell me, without adding or diminishing a tittle, and with all truth and candour, as is expected from, and practised by, all who profess the exercise of arms, as your worship does, under the title of knights-errant——I tell you I will lye in nothing, answered *Don Quixote*: therefore make either a beginning or an end of asking; for, in truth, you tire me out with so many salvos, postulatus, and preparatives, *Sancho*. I say, replied *Sancho*, that I am fully satisfied of the goodness and veracity of my master, and, that being to the purpose in our affair, I ask, with respect be it spoken, whether, since your being cooped up, or, as you say, enchanted, in this cage, your worship has not had an inclination to open the greater or the lesser

leſſer ſluices, as people are wont to ſay? I do not underſtand, *Sancho*, ſaid *Don Quixote*, what you mean by opening ſluices: explain yourſelf, if you would have me give you a direct answer. Is it poſſible, quoth *Sancho*, your worſhip ſhould not underſtand that phraſe, when the very children at ſchool are weaned with it? Know then, it means, whether you have not had a mind to do what nobody can do for you? Ay, now I comprehend you, *Sancho*, ſaid *Don Quixote*; and, in truth, I have often had ſuch a mind, and have at this very inſtant: help me out of this ſtreight; for I doubt all is not ſo clean as it ſhould be.

C H A P. XXII.

Of the ingenious conference between Sancho Pança and his maſter Don Quixote.

HA! quoth *Sancho*, now I have caught you: this is what I longed to know with all my heart and ſoul. Come on, Sir, can you deny what is commonly ſaid every where, when a perſon is in the dumps; I know not what ſuch or ſuch a one ails; he neither eats, nor drinks, nor ſleeps, nor answers to the purpoſe when he is aſked a queſtion; he looks for all the world as if he were enchanted. From whence it is concluded, that they, who do not eat, nor drink, nor ſleep, nor perform the natural actions I ſpeak of, ſuch only are enchanted, and not they, who have ſuch calls as your worſhip has, and who eat and drink when they can get it, and answer to all that is aſked them. You ſay right, *Sancho*, answered *Don Quixote*: but I have already told you, that there are ſundry ſorts of enchantments, and it may have ſo fallen out, that, in proceſs of time, they may have been changed from one to another, and that now it may be the faſhion for thoſe, who are enchanted, to do as I do, though formerly they did not: ſo that there is no arguing, nor drawing conſequences, againſt the cuſtom of the times. I know, and am verily perſuaded, that I am enchanted; and that is ſufficient for the diſcharge of my conſcience,

which would be heavily burthened, if I thought I was not enchanted, and should suffer myself to lie idle in this cage like a coward, defrauding the necessitous and oppressed of that succour I might have afforded them, when, perhaps, at this very moment, they may be in extreme want of my aid and protection. But for all that, replied *Sancho*, I say, for your greater and more abundant satisfaction, your worship would do well to endeavour to get out of this prison; which I will undertake to facilitate with all my might, and to effect it too; and then you may once more mount your trusty *Roxinante*, who seems as if he were enchanted too, so melancholy and dejected is he. And, when this is done, we may again try our fortune in search of adventures: and should it not succeed well, we shall have time enough to return to the cage, in which I promise, on the faith of a trusty and loyal squire, to shut myself up with your worship, if perchance you prove so unhappy, or I so simple, as to fail in the performance of what I say. I am content to do what you advise, brother *Sancho*, replied *Don Quixote*; and when you see a proper opportunity for working my deliverance, I will be ruled by you in every thing; but, *Sancho*, depend upon it, you will find how mistaken you are in your notion of my disgrace.

With these discourses the knight-errant and the evil-errant squire beguiled the time, 'till they came where the priest, the canon, and the barber, who were already alighted, waited for them. The waggoner presently unyoked the oxen from his team, and turned them loose in that green and delicious place, whose freshness invited to the enjoyment of it, not only persons as much enchanted as *Don Quixote*, but as considerate and discreet as his squire, who besought the priest to permit his master to come out of the cage for a while; otherwise that prison would not be quite so clean as the decorum of such a knight as his master required. The priest understood him, and said, that he would, with all his heart, consent to what he desired, were it not that he feared, lest his master, finding himself at liberty, should play one of his old pranks, and be gone where

no body should set eyes on him more. I will be security for his not running away, replied *Sancho*; and I also, said the canon, especially if he will pass his word as a knight that he will not leave us without our consent. I do pass it, answered *Don Quixote*, who was listening to all they said, and the rather, because whoever is enchanted, as I am, is not at liberty to dispose of himself as he pleases; for he, who has enchanted him, can make him that he shall not be able to stir in three centuries, and, if he should attempt an escape, will fetch him back on the wing: and, since this was the case, they might, he said, safely let him loose, especially it being so much for the advantage of them all; for should they not loose him, he protested, if they did not get farther off, he must needs offend their noses. The canon took him by the hand, though he was still manacled, and, upon his faith and word, they uncaged him; at which he was infinitely and above measure rejoiced to see himself out of the cage. And the first thing he did, was, to stretch his whole body and limbs: then he went where *Roxinante* stood; and, giving him a couple of flaps on the buttocks with the palm of his hand, he said: I have still hope in god, and in his blessed mother, O flower and mirror of steeds, that we two shall soon see ourselves in that state our hearts desire, thou with thy lord on thy back, and I mounted on thee, exercising the function for which heaven sent me into the world. And so saying, *Don Quixote*, with his squire *Sancho*, retired to some little distance; from whence he came back more lightsome, and more desirous to put in execution what his squire had projected. The canon gazed earnestly at him, and stood in admiration at his strange and unaccountable madness, perceiving, that, in all his discourse and answers, he discovered a very good understanding, and only lost his stirrups¹, as has been already said, when the conversation happened to turn upon the subject of chivalry. And so, after they were all sat down on the green

B 4

grafs;

¹ A metaphor taken from tilting at tournaments, where the knight that loses his stirrups is in danger of being dismounted.

grafs, in expectation of the sumpter-mule, the canon, being moved with compassion, said to him.

Is it possible, worthy Sir, that the crude and idle study of books of chivalry should have had that influence upon you, as to turn your brain, in such manner as to make you believe you are now enchanted, with other things of the same stamp, as far from being true, as falshood itself is from truth? How is it possible, any human understanding can persuade itself, there ever was in the world that infinity of *Amadis's*, that rabble of famous knights, so many emperors of *Trapifonda*, so many *Felixmartes* of *Hyrkania*, so many palfreys, so many damsels-errant, so many serpents, so many dragons, so many giants, so many unheard-of adventures, so many kinds of enchantments, so many battles, so many furious encounters, so much bravery of attire, so many princesses in love, so many squires become earls, so many witty dwarfs, so many billets-doux, so many courtships, so many valiant women, and lastly so many and such absurd accidents, as your books of knight-errantry contain? For my own part, when I read them, without reflecting that they are all falshood and folly, they give me some pleasure: but, when I consider what they are, I throw the very best of them against the wall, and should into the fire, had I one near me, as well deserving such a punishment, for being false and inveigling, and out of the road of common sense, as broachers of new sects and new ways of life, and as giving occasion to the ignorant vulgar to believe, and look upon as truths, the multitude of absurdities they contain. Nay, they have the presumption to dare to disturb the understandings of ingenious and well-born gentlemen, as is but too notorious in the effect they have had upon your worship, having reduced you to such a pass, that you are forced to be shut up in a cage, and carried on a team from place to place, like some lion or tyger, to be shewn for money. Ah Signor *Don Quixote*, have pity on yourself, and return into the bosom of discretion, and learn to make use of those great abilities heaven

has

has been pleased to bestow upon you, by employing that happy talent you are blessed with in some other kind of reading, which may redound to the benefit of your conscience, and to the encrease of your honour. But if a strong natural impulse must still lead you to books of exploits and chivalries, read, in the holy scripture, the book of *Judges*, where you will meet with wonderful truths, and achievements no less true than heroic. *Portugal* had a *Viriatius*, *Rome* a *Cæsar*, *Carthage* an *Hannibal*, *Greece* an *Alexander*, *Castile* a count *Fernando Gonzales*, *Valencia* a *Cid*, *Andalusia* a *Gonzalo Fernandez*, *Estremadura* a *Diego Garcia de Paredes*, *Xerez* a *Garci Perez de Vargas*, *Toledo* a *Garcilasso*, and *Sevil* a *Don Manuel de Leon*; the reading of whose valorous exploits may entertain, instruct, delight, and raise admiration in the most elevated genius. This, indeed, would be a study worthy of your good understanding, my dear friend, whereby you will become learned in history, enamoured of virtue, instructed in goodness, bettered in manners, valiant without rashness, and cautious without cowardice: and all this will redound to the glory of god, to your own profit, and the fame of *La Mancha*, from whence, as I understand, you derive your birth and origin.

Don Quixote listened with great attention to the canon's discourse; and when he found he had done, after having stared at him a pretty while, he said: I find, Sir, the whole of what you have been saying tends to persuade me, there never were any knights-errant in the world, and that all the books of chivalry are false, lying, mischievous, and unprofitable to the commonwealth; and that I have done ill in reading, worse in believing, and worst of all in imitating them, by taking upon me the rigorous profession of knight-errantry, which they teach: and you deny, that ever there were any *Amadis's*, either of *Gaul* or of *Greece*, or any other knights, such as those books are full of. It is all precisely as you say, quoth the canon. To which *Don Quixote* answered: You also were pleased to add, that those books had done me much prejudice, having turned my brain, and reduced me to the

34 *The LIFE and EXPLOITS of*

being carried about in a cage; and that it would be better for me to amend and change my course of study, by reading other books more true, more pleasant, and more instructive. True, quoth the canon. Why then, said *Don Quixote*, in my opinion, you are the madman and the enchanted person, since you have set yourself to utter so many blasphemies against a thing so universally received in the world, and held for such truth, that he, who should deny it, as you do, deserves the same punishment, you are pleased to say you bestow on those books, when you read them, and they vex you. For to endeavour to make people believe, that there never was an *Amadis* in the world, nor any other of the knights-adventurers, of which histories are full, would be to endeavour to persuade them, that the sun does not enlighten, the frost give cold, nor the earth yield sustenance. What genius can there be in the world able to persuade another, that the affair of the *Infanta Floripes* and *Guy of Burgundy* was not true; and that of *Fierabras* at the bridge of *Mantible*, which fell out in the time of *Charlemagne*; which, I vow to god, is as true, as that it is now day-light? and, if these be lyes, so must it also be, that there ever was a *Hector* or an *Achilles*, or a *Trojan* war, or the twelve peers of *France*, or king *Arthur* of *England*, who is still wandering about transformed into a raven, and is every minute expected in his kingdom. And will any one presume to say, that the history of *Guarino Mezquino*, and that of the law-suit of saint *Grial*¹, are lyes; or that the amours of *Sir Tristram* and the queen *Iseo*¹, and those of *Ginebra* and *Lancelot*, are also

¹ It should be *Graal* and *Isotta*. But this is the author's fault, not the translator's. Either the *Spanish* translators of those books made these mistakes, or *Cervantes* was not so well versed in them as he pretends: or, perhaps, having read them in his youth, he had partly forgotten them. That he had read them, is highly probable, as also that he had himself written an hundred sheets of one, as he makes the canon say above: for whoever reads his *Perfiles* and *Sigismunda* will easily perceive, that the first part, written in his youth, is very different from the latter, which was the last work he published. It may be proper to observe here, that his *Don Quixote* has not quite cured the romantic folly of his countrymen, since they prefer his *Perfiles* and *Sigismunda* to it.

also apocryphal ; whereas there are persons, who almost remember to have seen the *Duenna Quintannona*, who was the best skinker of wine that ever *Great Britain* could boast of ? And this is so certain, that I remember, my grandmother by my father's side, when she saw any *Duenna* reverently coifed, would say to me ; Look, grandson, that old woman is very like the *Duenna Quintannona*. From whence I infer, that she must either have known her, or at least have seen some portrait of her. Then, who can deny the truth of the history of *Peter of Provence* and the fair *Magalona*, since, to this very day, is to be seen, in the king's armory, the peg, wherewith he steered the wooden horse, upon which he rode through the air ? which peg is somewhat bigger than the pole of a coach : and close by the peg stands *Babieca's* saddle. And in *Roncesvalles* is to be seen *Orlando's* horn, as big as a great beam. From all which I conclude, that there were the *twelve Peers*, the *Peters*, the *Cids*, and such other knights as those the world calls adventurers. If not, let them also tell me, that the valiant *Portuguese John de Merlo* was no knight-errant ; he, who went to *Burgundy*, and, in the city of *Ras*, fought the famous lord of *Charni*, *Monseigneur* ¹ *Pierre*, and afterwards, in the city of *Basil* with *Monseigneur Enrique* of *Remestan*, coming off from both engagements conqueror, and loaded with honourable fame : besides the adventures and challenges, accomplished in *Burgundy*, of the valiant Spaniards *Pedro Barba*, and *Gutierrez Quixada* (from whom I am lineally descended) who vanquished the sons of the count *Saint Paul*. Let them deny likewise that *Don Fernando de Guevara* travelled into *Germany* in quest of adventures, where he fought with *Messire* ² *George*, a knight of the duke of *Austria's* court. Let them say, that the justs of *Suero*
de

¹ In Spanish *Mosen*, abbreviated from *Monseigneur*.

² In Spanish *Micer*. The *Noblesse* in *France*, who are below the quality of *Monseigneurs*, and above that of *Monsieurs*, are styled *Messires*.

36 *The LIFE and EXPLOITS of*

de Quinones of the *Pafs* ¹ were all mockery: with the enterprizes of *Monseigneur Louis de Falses* against *Don Gonzalo de Guzman* a *Castilian* knight; with many more exploits, performed by christian knights of these and of foreign kingdoms; all so authentic and true, that, I say again, whoever denies them must be void of all sense and reason.

The canon stood in admiration to hear the medley *Don Quixote* made of truths and lyes, and to see how skilled he was in all matters any way relating to knight-errantry; and therefore answered him: I cannot deny, Signor *Don Quixote*, but there is some truth in what you say, especially in relation to the *Spanish* knights-errant; and I am also ready to allow, that there were the twelve peers of *France*: but I can never believe, they did all those things ascribed to them by archbishop *Turpin*: for the truth is, they were knights chosen by the kings of *France*, and called peers, as being all equal in quality and prowess ²: at least, if they were not, it was fit they should be so: and in this respect they were not unlike our religious military orders of *Saint Jago* or *Calatrava*, which presuppose, that the professors are, or ought to be, cavaliers of worth, valour, and family: and, as now-a-days we say, a knight of *St. John*, or of *Alcantara*, in those times they said, a knight of the twelve peers, those of that military order being twelve in number, and all equal.

¹ It was at certain *Passes* that the knights-errant obliged all that went that way to break a lance with them in honour of their mistresses. This custom was either invented by the real nobility in the days of ignorance, and taken from them by the romance-writers, or, more probably, borrowed from the *Juego de Canas* of the *Moors*, which was performed by them with the greatest magnificence, and is still continued by the *Spaniards*. It was called in *England* a tilt and tournament, but has been long out of use. The *French* practised it about fourscore years ago, with great expence, under the name of a *Carrousel*. The ceremonies, challenges, &c. used therein are preserved in some historians, as *Froissard*, *Monstrelet*, &c.

² This is as great a fable as any in the book: for they were great lords, chosen by the king to assist him in the trial of great lords equal to themselves, and therefore called (*pairs*) peers, they having no equals among the rest of the people.

equal. That there was a *Cid*, is beyond all doubt, as likewise a *Bernardo del Carpio*; but that they performed the exploits told of them, I believe there is great reason to suspect. As to *Peter of Provence's* peg, and its standing close by *Babieca's* saddle, in the king's armory, I confess my sin, in being so ignorant, or short-sighted, that, though I have seen the saddle, I never could discover the peg; which is somewhat strange, considering how big you say it is. Yet, without all question, there it is, replied *Don Quixote*, by the same token that they say it is kept in a leathern case, that it may not take rust. It may be so, answered the canon; but, by the holy orders I have received, I do not remember to have seen it. But supposing I should grant you it is there, I do not therefore think my self bound to believe the stories of so many *Amadis's*, nor those of such a rabble rout of knights as we hear of: nor is it reasonable, that a gentleman, so honourable, of such excellent parts, and endued with so good an understanding as your self, should be persuaded that such strange follies, as are written in the absurd books of chivalry, are true.

C H A P. XXIII.

Of the ingenious contest between Don Quixote and the Canon, with other accidents.

A Good jest, indeed! answered *Don Quixote*; that books printed with the licence of kings, and the approbation of the examiners, read with general pleasure, and applauded by great and small, poor and rich, learned and ignorant, gentry and commonalty, in short, by all sorts of people, of what state or condition soever they be, should be all lyes, and especially carrying such an appearance of truth! for do they not tell us the father, the mother, the country, the kindred, the age, the place, with a particular detail of every action, performed daily by such a knight or knights? Good Sir, be silent, and do not utter such blasphemies; and believe me, I advise you to act in
this

this affair like a discreet person: do but peruse them, and you will find what pleasure attends this kind of reading. For, pray, tell me; Can there be a greater satisfaction than to see, placed as it were before our eyes, a vast lake of boiling pitch, and in it a prodigious number of serpents, snakes, crocodiles, and divers other kinds of fierce and dreadful creatures swimming up and down? and from the midst of the lake to hear a most dreadful voice, saying: ‘ O knight, ‘ whoever thou art, that standest beholding this tremendous lake, if thou art desirous to enjoy the happiness that lies concealed beneath these fable waters, shew the valour of thy undaunted breast, and ‘ plunge thy self headlong into the midst of this black ‘ and burning liquor; for, if thou doest not, thou ‘ wilt be unworthy to see the mighty wonders, inclosed therein, and contained in the seven castles of ‘ the seven enchanted nymphs, who dwell beneath this ‘ horrid blackness’. And scarcely has the knight heard the fearful voice, when, without farther consideration, or reflecting upon the danger, to which he exposes himself, and even without putting off his cumbersome and weighty armour, recommending himself to god and to his mistress, he plunges into the middle of the boiling pool; and, when he neither heeds nor considers what may become of him, he finds himself in the midst of flowery fields, with which those of *Elysium* can in no wise compare. There the sky seems more transparent, and the sun shines with a fresher brightness. Beyond it appears a pleasing forest, so green and shady, that its verdure rejoices the sight, whilst the ears are entertained with the sweet and artless notes of an infinite number of little painted birds, hopping to and fro’ among the intricate branches. Here he discovers a warbling brook, whose cool waters, resembling liquid crystal, run murmuring over the fine sands and snowy pebbles, out-glittering sifted gold and purest pearl. There he espies an artificial fountain of variegated jasper and polished marble. Here he beholds another of rustic work, in which the minute shells of the muscle, with the white and yellow

low wreathed houses of the snail, placed in orderly confusion, interspersed with pieces of glittering crystal, and pellucid emeralds, compose a work of such variety, that art imitating nature seems here to surpass her. Then on a sudden he descries a strong castle, or stately palace, whose walls are of massive gold, the battlements of diamonds, and the gates of hyacinths: in short, the structure is so admirable, that, though the materials, whereof it is framed, are no less than diamonds, carbuncles, rubies, pearls, gold, and emeralds, yet the workmanship is still more precious¹. And, after having seen all this, can any thing be more charming, than to behold, sallying forth at the castle-gate a goodly troop of damsels, whose bravery and gorgeous attire should I pretend to describe, as the histories do at large, I should never have done? and then she, who appears to be the chief of them all, presently takes by the hand the daring knight, who threw himself into the burning lake, and, without speaking a word, carries him into the rich palace, or castle, and, stripping him as naked as his mother bore him, bathes him in milk-warm water, and then anoints him all over with odoriferous essences, and puts on him a shirt of the finest lawn, all sweet-scented and perfumed. Then comes another damsel, and throws over his shoulders a mantle, reckoned worth, at the very least, a city or more. What a sight is it then, when after this he is carried to another hall, to behold the tables spread in such order, that he is struck with suspense and wonder! then to see him wash his hands in water distilled from amber and sweet-scented flowers! to see him seated in a chair of ivory! to behold the damsels waiting upon him in marvellous silence! then to see such variety of delicious viands, so favourily dressed, that the appetite is at a loss to direct the hand! To hear soft musick while he is eating, without knowing who

¹ Cervantes certainly had in view Ovid's description of the palace of the Sun:

Regia solis erat sublimibus alta columnis,

Clara micante auro, &c.

Materiam superabat opus,

Metam. l. 2. init.

who it is that sings, or from whence the sounds proceed ! And when dinner is ended, and the cloth taken away, the knight lolling in his chair, and perhaps picking his teeth, according to custom, enters unexpectedly at the hall door a damsel much more beautiful than any of the former, and, seating herself by the knight's side, begins to give him an account what castle that is, and how she is enchanted in it, with sundry other matters, which surprise the knight, and raise the admiration of those who read his history. I will enlarge no further hereupon ; for from hence you may conclude, that whatever part one reads of whatever history of knights-errant, must needs cause delight and wonder in the reader. Believe me then, Sir, and, as I have already hinted, read these books, and you will find, that they will banish all your melancholy, and meliorate your disposition, if it happens to be a bad one. This I can say for my self, that, since I have been a knight-errant, I am become valiant, civil, liberal, well-bred, generous, courteous, daring, affable, patient, a sufferer of toils, imprisonments, and enchantments : and though it be so little a while since I saw my self locked up in a cage like a mad-man, yet I expect, by the valour of my arm, heaven favouring, and fortune not oppugning, in a few days to see my self king of some kingdom, wherein I may display the gratitude and liberality enclosed in this breast of mine ; for, upon my faith, Sir, the poor man is disabled from practising the virtue of liberality, though he possess it in never so eminent a degree ; and the gratitude, which consists only in inclination, is a dead thing, even as faith without works is dead. For which reason I should be glad that fortune would offer me speedily some opportunity of becoming an emperor, that I may shew my heart, by doing good to my friends, especially to poor *Sancho Pança* here my Squire, who is the honestest man in the world ; and I would fain bestow on him an earldom, as I have long since promised him, but that I fear, he will not have ability sufficient to govern his estate.

Sancho

Sancho overheard his master's last words, to whom he said : Take you the pains, Signor *Don Quixote*, to procure me this same earldom, so often promised by you, and so long expected by me ; for I assure you I shall not want for ability sufficient to govern it. But supposing I had not, I have heard say, there are people in the world, who take lordships to farm, paying the owners so much a year, and taking upon themselves the whole management thereof, whilst the lord himself, with out-stretched legs lies along at his ease, enjoying the rent they give him, without concerning himself any further about it. Just so will I do, and give myself no more trouble than needs must, but immediately surrender all up, and live upon my rents like any duke, and let the world rub. This, brother *Sancho*, quoth the canon, is to be understood only as to the enjoyment of the revenue : but as to the administration of justice, the lord himself must look to that ; and for this ability, sound judgment, and especially an upright intention, are required ; for if these be wanting in the beginnings, the means and ends will always be erroneous ; and therefore god usually prospers the good intentions of the simple, and disappoints the evil designs of the cunning. I do not understand these philosophies, answered *Sancho* ; I only know, I wish I may as speedily have the earldom, as I should know how to govern it ; for I have as large a soul as another, and as large a body as the best of them ; and I should be as much king of my own dominion, as any one is of his : and being so, I would do what I pleased ; and doing what I pleased, I should have my will ; and having my will, I should be contented ; and when one is contented, there is no more to be desired ; and when there is no more to be desired, there's an end of it ; and let the estate come, and god be with ye ; and let us see it, as one blind man said to another. These are no bad philosophies, as you say, *Sancho*, quoth the canon ; nevertheless there is a great deal more to be said upon the subject of earldoms. To which *Don Quixote* replied : I know not what more may be said ; only I govern myself by the example

ample set me by the great *Amadis de Gaul*, who made his squire knight of the *Firm-Island*; and therefore I may, without scruple of conscience, make an earl of *Sancho Pança*, who is one of the best squires that ever knight-errant had. The canon was amazed at *Don Quixote*'s methodical and orderly madness, the manner of his describing the adventure of the knight of the lake, the impression made upon him by those premeditated lies he had read in his books: and lastly, he admired at the simplicity of *Sancho*, who so vehemently desired to obtain the earldom his master had promised him.

By this time the canon's servants, who went to the inn for the sumpter-mule, were come back; and spreading a carpet on the green grass, they sat down under the shade of some trees, and dined there, that the waggoner might not lose the conveniency of that fresh pasture, as we have said before. And while they were eating, they heard on a sudden a loud noise, and the sound of a little bell in a thicket of briars and thorns that was hard by; and at the same instant they saw a very beautiful she-goat, speckled with black, white, and gray, run out of the thicket. After her came a goatherd, calling to her aloud, in his wonted language, to stop and come back to the fold. The fugitive goat, trembling and affrighted, betook herself to the company, as it were for their protection, and there she stopped. The goatherd came up, and taking her by the horns, as if she were capable of discourse and reasoning, he said to her: Ah! wanton, spotted, fool! what caprice hath made thee halt thus of late days? what wolves wait for thee, child? wilt thou tell me, pretty one, what this means? but what else can it mean, but that thou art a female, and therefore canst not be quiet? a curse on thy humours, and all theirs, whom thou resemblest so much! turn back, my love, turn back; for though, perhaps, you will not be so contented, at least, you will be more safe in your own fold, and among your own companions: and if you, who are to look after, and guide them, go yourself so much astray, what must
become

become of them ? The goatherd's words delighted all the hearers extremely, especially the canon, who said to him : I entreat you, brother, be not in such a hurry to force back this goat so soon to her fold ; for since, as you say, she is a female, she will follow her own natural instinct, though you take never so much pains to hinder her. Come, take this morsel, and then drink ; whereby you will temper your choler, and in the mean while the goat will rest herself. And in saying this he gave him the hinder quarter of a cold rabbit on the point of a fork. The goatherd took it and thanked him ; then drank, and sat down quietly, and said : I would not have you, gentlemen, take me for a foolish fellow, for having talked sense to this animal ; for in truth the words I spoke to her are not without a mystery. I am a country fellow, 'tis true, yet not so much a rustic but I know the difference between conversing with men and beasts. I verily believe you, said the priest ; for I have found by experience, that the mountains breed learned men, and the cottages of shepherds contain philosophers. At least, Sir, replied the goatherd, they afford men, who have some knowledge from experience ; and, to convince you of this truth, though I seem to invite myself without being asked, if it be not tiresome to you, and if you please, gentlemen, to lend me your attention, I will tell you a true story, which will confirm what I and this same gentleman (pointing to the priest) have said. To this *Don Quixote* answered : Seeing this business has somewhat of the face of an-adventure, I for my part will listen to you, brother, with all my heart, and so will all these gentlemen, being discreet and ingenious persons, and such as love to hear curious novelties, that surprise, gladden, and entertain the senses, as I do not doubt but your story will do. Begin then, friend, for we will all hearken. I draw my stake, quoth *Sancho*, and hye me with this pasty to yonder brook, where I intend to stuff myself for three days ; for I have heard my master *Don Quixote* say, that the squire of a knight-errant must eat, when he has it, till he can eat no longer, because it often happens that they

they get into some wood so intricate, that there is no hitting the way out in six days, and then, if a man has not his belly well lined, or his wallet well provided, there he may remain, and often does remain, till he is turned into mummy. You are in the right, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*: go whither you will, and eat what you can; for I am already fated, and want only to give my mind its repast, which I am going to do by listening to this honest man's story. We all do the same, quoth the canon, and then desired the goatherd to begin the tale he had promised. The goatherd gave the goat, which he held by the horns, two slaps on the back with the palm of his hand, saying: lie thee down by me, speckled fool; for we have time and to spare for returning to our fold. The goat seemed to understand him; for as soon as her master was seated, she laid herself close by him very quietly, and, looking up in his face, seemed to signify she was attentive to what the goatherd was going to relate, who began his story in this manner.

C H A P. XXIV.

Which treats of what the goatherd related to all those who accompanied Don Quixote.

THREE leagues from this valley there is a town, which, though but small, is one of the richest in all these parts: and therein dwelt a farmer of so good a character, that, though esteem is usually annexed to riches, yet he was more respected for his virtue, than for the wealth he possessed. But that, which completed his happiness, as he used to say himself, was his having a daughter of such extraordinary beauty, rare discretion, gracefulness, and virtue, that whoever knew and beheld her was in admiration to see the surpassing endowments, wherewith heaven and nature had enriched her. When a child, she was pretty, and, as she grew up, became still more and more beautiful, 'till, at the age of sixteen, she was beauty itself. And now the fame of her beauty began to extend itself thro' all

all the neighbouring villages round : do I say, thro' the neighbouring villages only ? it spread itself to the remotest cities, and even made its way into the palaces of kings, and reached the ears of all sorts of people, who came to see her from all parts, as if she had been some relic, or wonder-working image. Her father guarded her, and she guarded herself ; for there are no padlocks, bolts, nor bars, that secure a maiden better than her own reserve. The wealth of the father, and the beauty of the daughter, induced many, both of the town, and strangers, to demand her to wife. But he, whose right it was to dispose of so precious a jewel, was perplexed, not knowing, amidst the great number of importunate suitors, on which to bestow her. Among the many, who were thus disposed, I was one, and flattered myself with many and great hopes of success, as being known to her father, born in the same village, untainted in blood, in the flower of my age, tolerably rich, and of no despicable understanding. With the very same advantages another person of our village demanded her also in marriage ; which occasioned a suspense and balancing of her father's will, who thought his daughter would be very well matched with either of us : and, to get out of this perplexity, he determined to acquaint *Leandra* with it (for that is the rich maiden's name, who has reduced me to this wretched state) considering, that, since our pretensions were equal, it was best to leave the choice to his beloved daughter : an example worthy the imitation of all parents, who would marry their children. I do not say, they should give them their choice in things prejudicial ; but they should propose to them good ones, and out of them let them chuse to their minds. For my part, I know not what was *Leandra's* liking : I only know, that her father put us both off by pleading the too tender age of his daughter, and with such general expressions, as neither laid any obligation upon him, nor disobliged either of us. My rival's name is *Anselmo*, and mine *Eugenio* ; for it is fit you should know the names of the persons concerned in this tragedy, the catastrophe of which is still

still depending, though one may easily foresee it will be disastrous.

About that time, there came to our town one *Vincent de la Rosa*, son of a poor farmer of the same village : which *Vincent* was come out of *Italy*, and other countries, where he had served in the wars. A captain, who happened to march that way with his company, had carried him away from our town at twelve years of age, and the young man returned at the end of twelve years more, in the garb of a soldier, set off with a thousand colours, and hung with a thousand crystal trinkets, and fine steel-chains. To-day he put on one finery, to-morrow another ; but all flight and counterfeit, of little weight and less value. The country-folks, who are naturally malicious, and, if they have ever so little leisure, are malice itself, observed, and reckoned up all his trappings and gewgaws, and found that he had three suits of apparel, of different colours, with hose and garters to them : but he cooked them up so many different ways, and had so many inventions about them, that, if one had not counted them, one would have sworn he had had above ten suits, and above twenty plumes of feathers. And let not what I have been saying of his dress be looked upon as impertinent or superfluous ; for it makes a considerable part of this story. He used to seat himself on a stone-bench, under a great poplar-tree in our market-place, and there he would hold us all gaping, and listening to the exploits he would be telling us. There was no country on the whole globe he had not seen, nor battle he had not been in. He had slain more *Moors* than are in *Moreocco* and *Tunis*, and fought more duels, as he said, than *Gante*, *Luna*, *Diego Garcia de Paredes*, and a thousand others, and always came off victorious, without having lost a drop of blood. Then again he would be shewing us marks of wounds, which, though they were not to be discerned, he would persuade us were so many musket-shots received in several actions and fights. In a word, with an unheard-of arrogance, he would *thou* his equals and acquaintance, saying, his arm was his father, his deeds his pedigree, and that,

that, under the title of soldier, he owed the king himself nothing. To these bravadoes was added, his being somewhat of a musician, and scratching a little upon the guitar, which some said he would make speak. But his graces and accomplishments did not end here ; for he was also a bit of a poet, and would compose a ballad, a league and a half in length, on every childish accident that passed in the village.

Now this soldier, whom I have here described, this *Vincent de la Rosa*, this heroe, this galant, this musician, this poet, was often eyed and beheld by *Leandra*, from a window of her house which faced the market-place. She was struck with the tinsel of his gaudy apparel : his ballads enchanted her ; and he gave at least twenty copies about of all he composed : the exploits he related of himself reached her ears : lastly (for so, it seems, the devil had ordained) she fell downright in love with him, before he had entertained the presumption of courting her. And, as, in affairs of love, none are so easily accomplished as those, which are favoured by the inclination of the lady, *Leandra* and *Vincent* easily came to an agreement, and, before any of the multitude of her suitors had the least suspicion of her design, she had already accomplished it : for she left the house of her dear and beloved father (for mother she had none) and absented herself from the town with the soldier, who came off from this attempt more triumphantly than from any of those others he had so arrogantly boasted of. This event amazed the whole town, and all that heard any thing of it. I, for my part, was confounded, *Anselmo* astonished, her father sad, her kindred ashamed, justice alarmed, and the troopers of the holy brotherhood in readiness. They beset the highways, and searched the woods, leaving no place unexamined ; and, at the end of three days, they found the poor fond *Leandra* in a cave of a mountain, naked to her shift, and stripped of a large sum of money, and several valuable jewels. she had carried away from home. They brought her back into the presence of her disconsolate father ; they asked her how this misfortune had befallen

len her : she readily confessed that *Vincent de la Rosa* had deceived her, and, upon promise of marriage, had persuaded her to leave her father's house, telling her he would carry her to *Naples*, the richest and most delicious city of the whole world ; that she, through too much credulity and inadvertency, had believed him, and, robbing her father, had put all into his hands, the night she was first missing ; and that he conveyed her to a craggy mountain, and shut her up in that cave, in which they had found her. She also related to them how the soldier plundered her of every thing but her honour, and left her there, and fled : a circumstance which made us all wonder afresh ; for it was no easy matter to persuade us of the young man's continency : but she affirmed it with so much earnestness, that her father was in some sort comforted, making no great account of the other riches the soldier had taken from his daughter, since he had left her that jewel, which, once lost, can never be recovered.

The very same day that *Leandra* returned, she disappeared again from our eyes, her father sending and shutting her up in a nunnery belonging to a town not far distant, in hopes that time may wear off a good part of the reproach his daughter has brought upon herself. Her tender years were some excuse for her fault, especially with those who had no interest in her being good or bad : but they, who are acquainted with her good sense and understanding, could not ascribe her fault to her ignorance, but to her levity, and to the natural propensity of the sex, which is generally unthinking and disorderly. *Leandra* being shut up, *Anselmo's* eyes were blinded ; at least they saw nothing that could afford them any satisfaction : and mine were in darkness, without light to direct them to any pleasurable object. The absence of *Leandra* encreased our sadness, and diminished our patience : we cursed the soldier's finery, and detested her father's want of precaution. At last, *Anselmo* and I agreed to quit the town, and betake ourselves to this valley, where, he feeding a great number of sheep of his own, and I a numerous herd of goats of mine, we pass our lives
among

among these trees, giving vent to our passions, or singing together the praises, or reproaches, of the fair *Leandra*, or sighing alone, and each apart communicating our complaints to heaven. Several others of *Leandra*'s suitors, in imitation of us, are come to these rocky mountains, practising the same employments; and they are so numerous, that this place seems to be converted into the pastoral *Arcadia*, it is so full of shepherds and folds; nor is there any part of it where the name of the beautiful *Leandra* is not heard. One utters execrations against her, calling her fond, fickle, and immodest: another condemns her forwardness and levity: some excuse and pardon her: others arraign and condemn her: one celebrates her beauty; another rails at her ill qualities: in short, all blame, and all adore her; and the madness of all rises to that pitch, that some complain of her disdain, who never spoke to her: yea some there are, who bemoan themselves, and feel the raging disease of jealousy, though she never gave any occasion for it; for, as I have said, her guilt was known before her inclination. There is no hollow of a rock, nor brink of a rivulet, nor shade of a tree, that is not occupied by some shepherd, who is recounting his misfortunes to the air: the echo, wherever it can be formed, repeats the name of *Leandra*: the mountains resound *Leandra*; the brooks murmur *Leandra*: in short, *Leandra* holds us all in suspense and enchanted, hoping without hope, and fearing without knowing what we fear. Among these extravagant madmen, he, who shews the least and the most sense, is my rival *Anselmo*, who, having so many other causes of complaint, complains only of absence, and to the sound of a rebeck, which he touches to admiration, pours forth his complaints in verses, which discover an excellent genius. I follow an easier, and, in my opinion, a better way, which is, to inveigh against the levity of women, their inconstancy, and double-dealing, their lifeless promises, and broken faith; and, in short, the little discretion they shew in placing their affections, or making their choice.

This, gentlemen, was the occasion of the odd expressions and language I used to this goat, when I came hither ; for, being a female, I despise her, though she be the best of all my flock. This is the story I promised to tell you : if I have been tedious in the relation, I will endeavour to make you amends by my service : my cottage is hard by, where I have new milk, and very favoury cheese, with variety of fruits of the season, not less agreeable to the sight than to the taste.

C H A P. XXV.

Of the Quarrel between Don Quixote and the Goatherd, with the rare adventure of the Disciplinants, which he happily accomplished with the sweat of his brows.

THE goatherd's tale gave a general pleasure to all that heard it, especially to the canon, who, with an unusual curiosity, took notice of his manner of telling it, in which he discovered more of the polite courtier, than of the rude goatherd ; and therefore he said, that the priest was very much in the right in affirming, that the mountains produced men of letters. They all offered their service to *Eugenio* : but the most prodigal of his offers upon this occasion was *Don Quixote*, who said to him ; In truth, brother goatherd, were I in a capacity of undertaking any new adventure, I would immediately set forward to do you a good turn, by fetching *Leandra* out of the nunnery, in which, doubtless, she is detained against her will, in spite of the abbess and all opposers, and putting her into your hands, to be disposed of at your pleasure, so far as is consistent with the laws of chivalry, which enjoin that no kind of violence be offered to damsels : though I hope in god our lord, that the power of one malicious enchanter shall not be so prevalent, but that the power of another and a better-intentioned one may prevail over it ; and then I promise you my aid, and protection, as I am obliged by my profession, which

is

is no other than to favour the weak and necessitous. The goatherd stared at *Don Quixote*; and observing his bad plight and scurvy appearance, he whispered the barber, who sat next him; Pray, Sir, who is this man, who makes such a strange figure, and talks so extravagantly? Who should it be, answered the barber, but the famous *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, the redresser of injuries, the righter of wrongs, the relief of maidens, the dread of giants, and the conqueror of battles? This, said the goatherd, is like what we read of in the books of knights-errant, who did all that you tell me of this man; though, as I take it, either your worship is in jest, or the apartments in this gentleman's scull are notably unfurnished. You are a very great rascal, said *Don Quixote* at this instant, and you are the empty-sculled and the shallow-brained; for I am fuller than ever was the whoreson drab that bore thee: and, so saying, and muttering on, he snatched up a loaf that was near him, and with it struck the goatherd full in the face, with so much fury, that he laid his nose flat. The goatherd, who did not understand raillery, perceiving how much in earnest he was treated, without any respect to the carpet or table-cloth, or to the company that sat about it, leaped upon *Don Quixote*, and, griping him by the throat with both hands, would doubtless have strangled him, had not *Sancho Pança* come up in that instant, and, taking him by the shoulders, thrown him back on the table, breaking the dishes and platters, and spilling and overturning all that was upon it. *Don Quixote*, finding himself loose, ran again at the goatherd, who, being kicked and trampled upon by *Sancho*, and his face all over bloody, was feeling about, upon all four, for some knife or other, to take a bloody revenge withal: but the canon and the priest prevented him; and the barber contrived it so, that the goatherd got *Don Quixote* under him, on whom he poured such a shower of buffets, that there rained as much blood from the visage of the poor knight, as there did from his own. The canon and the priest were ready to burst with laughter;

the troopers of the holy brotherhood danced and capered for joy ; and they stood hallooing them on, as people do dogs when they are fighting : only *Sancho* was at his wits end, not being able to get loose from one of the canon's servants, who held him from going to assist his master. In short, while all were in high joy and merriment, excepting the two combatants, who were still worrying one another, on a sudden they heard the sound of a trumpet, so dismal, that it made them turn their faces towards the way from whence they fancied the sound came : but he, who was most surprized at hearing it, was *Don Quixote*, who, though he was under the goatherd, sorely against his will, and more than indifferently mauled, said to him : Brother devil (for it is impossible you should be any thing else, since you have had the valour and strength to subdue mine) truce, I beseech you, for one hour ; for the dolorous sound of that trumpet, which reaches our ears, seems to summon me to some new adventure. The goatherd, who by this time was pretty well weary of mauling, and being mauled, immediately let him go, and *Don Quixote*, getting upon his legs, turned his face toward the place whence the sound came, and presently saw several people descending from a rising ground, arrayed in white, after the manner of disciplinants¹.

The case was, that the clouds, that year, had failed to refresh the earth with seasonable showers, and throughout all the villages of that district they made processions, disciplines, and public prayers, beseeching god to open the hands of his mercy, and send them rain : and for this purpose the people of a town hard-by were coming in procession to a devout hermitage, built upon the side of a hill bordering upon that valley. *Don Quixote*, perceiving the strange attire of the disciplinants, without recollecting how often he must have seen the like before, imagined it was some kind of adventure, and that it belonged to him alone,

as

¹ Persons, either volunteers or hirelings, who march in procession, whipping themselves by way of public penance.

f
l ca-
n, as
ancho
from
going
high
who
they
made
ence
most
ough
will,
Bro-
hing
n to
for
our
ure.
eary
him
ned
and
fing
fci-

iled
and
ade
ing
em
rd-
ge,
al-
of
he
me
ne,
as
ro-





J. Vanderbank inv. et Del.

T. Chambers Sculp.

as a knight-errant, to undertake it: and he was the more confirmed in this fancy by thinking, that an image they had with them, covered with black ¹, was some lady of note, whom those miscreants and discourteous ruffians were forcing away. And no sooner had he taken this into his head, than he ran with great agility to *Roxinante*, who was grazing about; and, taking the bridle and the buckler from the pummel of the saddle, he bridled him in a trice, and, demanding from *Sancho* his sword, he mounted *Roxinante*, and braced his target, and with a loud voice said to all that were present: Now, my worthy companions, you shall see of what consequence it is that there are in the world such as profess the order of chivalry: now, I say, you shall see, by my restoring liberty to that good lady, who is carried captive yonder, whether knights-errant are to be valued, or not. And so saying, he laid legs to *Roxinante* (for spurs he had none) and on a hand-gallop (for we no-where read, in all this faithful history, that ever *Roxinante* went full-speed) he ran to encounter the disciplinants. The priest, the canon, and the barber, in vain endeavoured to stop him; and in vain did *Sancho* cry out, saying, Whither go you, Signor *Don Quixote*? What devils are in you, that instigate you to assault the catholic faith? Consider, a curse on me! that this is a procession of disciplinants, and that the lady, carried upon the bier, is an image of the blessed and immaculate virgin: have a care what you do; for this once I am sure you do not know. *Sancho* wearied himself to no purpose; for his master was so bent upon encountering the men in white, and delivering the mourning lady, that he heard not a word, and, if he had, would not have come back, though the king himself had commanded him. Being now come up to the procession, he checked *Roxinante*, who already had a

C 3 desire

¹ These images are usually of wood, and as big as the life, and by the smoke of tapers, and length of time, become very black. This whole passage, as well as many others, is a sly satire on the superstition of the *Romish* church; and it is a wonder the inquisition suffered it to pass, though thus covertly,

desire to rest a little, and, with a disordered and hoarse voice, said: You there, who cover your faces, for no good I suppose, stop, and give ear to what I shall say. The first who stopped were they who carried the image; and one of the four ecclesiastics, who sung the litanies, observing the strange figure of *Don Quixote*, the leanness of *Rozinante*, and other ridiculous circumstances attending the knight, answered him, saying: Good brother, if you have any thing to say to us, say it quickly; for these our brethren are tearing their flesh to pieces, and we cannot, nor is it reasonable we should, stop to hear any thing, unless it be so short, that it may be said in two words. I will say it in one, replied *Don Quixote*, and it is this; that you immediately set at liberty that fair lady, whose tears and sorrowful countenance are evident tokens of her being carried away against her will, and that you have done her some notorious injury; and I, who was born into the world on purpose to redress such wrongs, will not suffer you to proceed one step farther, 'till you have given her the liberty she desires and deserves. By these expressions, all that heard them gathered that *Don Quixote* must be some mad-man; whereupon they fell a laughing very heartily; which was adding fuel to the fire of *Don Quixote's* choler: for, without saying a word more, he drew his sword, and attacked the bearers; one of whom, leaving the burthen to his comrades, stepped forward to encounter *Don Quixote*, brandishing a pole whereon he rested the bier when they made a stand, and receiving on it a huge stroke, which the knight let fly at him, and which broke it in two, with what remained of it he gave *Don Quixote* such a blow on the shoulder of his sword-arm, that, his target not being able to ward off so furious an assault, poor *Don Quixote* fell to the ground in evil plight. *Sancho Pança*, who came puffing close after him, perceiving him fallen, called out to his adversary not to strike him again, for he was a poor enchanted knight, who never had done any body harm in all the days of his life. But that, which made the rustic forbear,

forbear, was not *Sancho's* crying out, but his seeing that *Don Quixote* stirred neither hand nor foot; and so, believing he had killed him, in all haste he tucked up his frock under his girdle, and began to fly away over the field as nimble as a buck. By this time all *Don Quixote's* company was come up, and the processioners, seeing them running toward them, and with them the troopers of the holy brotherhood with their cross-bows, began to fear some ill accident, and drew up in a circle round the image; and, lifting up their hoods¹, and grasping their whips, as the ecclesiastics did their tapers, they stood expecting the assault, determined to defend themselves, and, if they could, to offend their aggressors. But fortune ordered it better than they imagined: for all that *Sancho* did, was, to throw himself upon the body of his master, and to pour forth the most dolorous and ridiculous lamentation in the world, believing verily that he was dead. The priest was known by another priest, who came in the procession, and their being acquainted dissipated the fear of the two squadrons. The first priest gave the second an account in two words who *Don Quixote* was; whereupon he and the whole rout of disciplinants went to see whether the poor knight was dead, or not, and they over-heard *Sancho Pança* say, with tears in his eyes; O flower of chivalry, who by one single thwack hast finished the career of thy well-spent life! O glory of thy race, credit and renown of *La Mancha*, yea of the whole world, which, by wanting thee, will be over-run with evil-doers, who will no longer fear the being chastised for their iniquities! O liberal above all *Alexanders*, seeing that, for eight months service only, you have given me the best island the sea doth compass or surround! O thou that wert humble with the haughty, and arrogant with the humble, undertaker of dangers, sufferer of affronts, in love without cause, imitator of the good, scourge of the wicked, enemy of the base; in a word, knight-errant, which is all that can be said! At *Sancho's* cries

C 4

and

¹ The Disciplinants wear hoods with holes to see through, that they may not be known.

and lamentations *Don Quixote* revived, and the first word he said was : He, who lives absented from thee, sweetest *Dulcinea*, is subject to greater miseries than these. Help, friend *Sancho*, to lay me upon the enchanted car ; for I am no longer in a condition to press the saddle of *Rozinante*, all this shoulder being mashed to pieces. That I will do with all my heart, dear Sir, answered *Sancho* ; and let us return home in company of these gentlemen, who wish you well, and there we will give order about another sally, that may prove of more profit and renown. You say well, *Sancho*, answered *Don Quixote*, and it will be great prudence in us to wait 'till the evil influence of the stars, which now reigns, is passed over. The canon, the priest, and the barber, told him they approved his resolution ; and so, having received a great deal of pleasure from the simplicities of *Sancho Pança*, they placed *Don Quixote* in the waggon, as before. The procession resumed its former order, and went on its way. The goatherd bid them all farewell. The troopers would go no farther, and the priest paid them what they had agreed for. The canon desired the priest to give him advice of what befel *Don Quixote*, and whether his madness was cured or continued, and so took leave, and pursued his journey. In fine, they all parted, and took their several ways, leaving the priest, the barber, *Don Quixote*, and *Sancho*, with good *Rozinante*, who bore all accidents as patiently as his master. The waggoner yoked his oxen, and accommodated *Don Quixote* on a truss of hay, and with his accustomed pace jogged on the way the priest directed. On the sixth day they arrived at *Don Quixote's* village, and entered it about noon ; and it being *Sunday*, all the people were standing in the market-place, through the midst of which *Don Quixote's* car must of necessity pass. Every body ran to see who was in the waggon, and, when they found it was their townsman, they were greatly surprized, and a boy ran full speed to acquaint the house-keeper and niece, that their uncle and master was coming home weak and pale, and stretched

stretched upon a truss of hay, in a waggon drawn by oxen. It was piteous to hear the outcries the two good women raised, to see the buffets they gave themselves, and how they cursed afresh the damned books of chivalry; and all this was renewed by seeing *Don Quixote* coming in at the gate.

UPON the news of *Don Quixote's* arrival, *Sancho Pança's* wife, who knew her husband was gone with him to serve him as his squire, repaired thither; and as soon as she saw *Sancho*, the first thing she asked him was, whether the ass was come home well. *Sancho* answered he was, and in a better condition than his master. The lord be praised, replied she, for so great a mercy to me: but tell me, friend, what good have you got by your squireship? what petticoat do you bring home to me, and what shoes to your children? I bring nothing of all this, dear wife, quoth *Sancho*; but I bring other things of greater moment and consequence. I am very glad of that, answered the wife: pray, shew me these things of greater moment and consequence, my friend; for I would fain see them, to rejoice this heart of mine, which has been so sad and discontented all the long time of your absence. You shall see them at home, wife, quoth *Sancho*, and be satisfied at present; for if it please god, that we make another sally in quest of adventures, you will soon see me an earl or governor of an island, and not an ordinary one neither, but one of the best that is to be had. Grant heaven it may be so, husband, quoth the wife, for we have need enough of it. But pray, tell me what you mean by islands; for I do not understand you. Honey is not made for the mouth of an ass, answered *Sancho*: in good time you shall see, wife, yea, and admire to hear yourself stiled ladyship by all your vassals. What do you mean, *Sancho*, by ladyship, islands, and vassals? answered *Teresa Pança*; for that was *Sancho's* wife's name, though they were not of kin, but because it is the custom in *La Mancha* for the wife to take the husband's name. Be not in so much haste, *Teresa*, to know all this, said *Sancho*; let it suffice that I tell you the truth, and sew

up your mouth. But for the present know, that there is nothing in the world so pleasant to an honest man, as to be squire to a knight-errant, and seeker of adventures. It is true, indeed, most of them are not so much to a man's mind as he could wish; for ninety nine of a hundred one meets with fall out crofs and unlucky. This I know by experience; for I have sometimes come off tossed in a blanket, and sometimes well cudgelled. Yet for all that it is a fine thing to be in expectation of accidents, traversing mountains, searching woods, marching over rocks, visiting castles, lodging in inns, all at discretion, and the devil a far-thing to pay.

All this discourse passed between *Sancho Pança*, and his wife *Teresa Pança*, while the house-keeper and the niece received *Don Quixote*, and, having pulled off his cloaths, laid him in his old bed. He looked at them with eyes askew, not knowing perfectly where he was. The priest charged the niece to take great care, and make much of her uncle, and to keep a watchful eye over him, lest he should once more give them the slip, telling her what difficulty they had to get him home to his house. Here the two women exclaimed afresh, and renewed their execrations against all books of chivalry, begging of heaven to confound to the center of the abyfs the authors of so many lyes and absurdities. Lastly, they remained full of trouble and fear, lest they should lose their uncle and master as soon as ever he found himself a little better: and it fell out as they imagined. But the author of this history, though he applied himself, with the utmost curiosity and diligence, to trace the exploits *Don Quixote* performed in his third fally, could get no account of them, at least from any authentic writings. Only fame has preserved in the memoirs of *La Mancha*, that *Don Quixote*, the third time he sallied from home, went to *Saragossa* ¹, where he was present at a famous tournament in that city, and that there besel him things worthy of his valour and good understanding. Nor
should

¹ Hence the false second part, by *Avellaneda*, took the hint to send the *Don* to *Saragossa*.

should he have learned any thing at all concerning his death, if a lucky accident had not brought him acquainted with an aged Physician, who had in his custody a leaden box, found, as he said, under the ruins of an ancient hermitage then rebuilding: in which box was found a manuscript of parchment written in *Gothic* characters ¹, but in *Castilian* verse, containing many of his exploits, and giving an account of the beauty of *Dulcinea del Toboso*, the figure of *Rozinante*, the fidelity of *Sancho Pança*, and the burial of *Don Quixote* himself, with several epitaphs, and elogies on his life and manners. All that could be read, and perfectly made out, were those inserted here by the faithful author of this strange and never-before-seen history: which author desires no other reward from those, who shall read it, in recompence of the vast pains it has cost him to enquire into and search all the archives of *La Mancha* to bring it to light, but that they would afford him the same credit that ingenious people give to books of knight-errantry, which are so well received in the world; and herewith he will reckon himself well paid, and will rest satisfied; and will moreover be encouraged to seek and find out others, if not as true, at least of as much invention and entertainment. The first words, written in the parchment which was found in the leaden box, were these.

The Academicians of *Argamasilla*, a town of *La Mancha*, on the life and death of the valorous *Don Quixote de La Mancha*, *hoc scripserunt*.

Monicongo, Academician of *Argamasilla*, on the sepulture of *Don Quixote*.

E P I T A P H.

*La Mancha's thunderbolt of war,
The sharpest wit and loftiest muse,
The arm, which from Gaëta far
To Catai did its force diffuse:*

He,

¹ The use of which was prohibited in Spain in the time of *Alphonfus* the sixth.

60 *The LIFE and EXPLOITS of*

*He, who, through love and valour's fire,
Outstript great Amadis's fame,
Bid warlike Galaor retire,
And silent'd Belianis' name:*

*He, who with helmet, sword and shield,
On Rozinante steed well known,
Adventures sought in many a field,
Lies underneath this frozen stone.*

Paniaguado, Academician of Argamasilla, in laudem
Dulcineæ del Toboso.

S O N N E T.

*She, whom you see, the plump and lussy dame,
With high erected chest and vigorous mien,
Was erst th' enamour'd knight Don Quixote's flame,
The fair Dulcinea, of Toboso queen.
For her, arm'd cap-a-pee with sword and shield,
He trod the sable mountain o'er and o'er;
For her he travers'd Montiel's well-known field,
And in her service toils unnumber'd bore.
Hard Fate! that death should crop so fine a flow'r,
And love o'er such a knight exert his tyrant pow'r!*

Caprichoso, a most ingenious Academician of Argamasilla, in praise of Don Quixote's horse Rozinante.

S O N N E T.

*On the aspiring adamantin trunk
Of an huge tree, whose root with slaughter drunk
Sends forth a scent of war, La Mancha's knight,
Frantic with valour, and return'd from fight,
His bloody standard trembling in the air,
Hangs up his glittering armour, beaming far,
With that fine-temper'd steel, whose edge o'erthrows,
Hacks, bews, confounds, and routs opposing foes.*

Unheard

*Unheard-of prowess! and unheard-of verse!
But art new strains invents new glories to rehearse.*

*If Amadis to Grecia gives renown,
Much more her chief does fierce Bellona crown,
Prizing La Mancha more than Gaul or Greece;
As Quixote triumphs over Amadis.
Oblivion ne'er shall shroud his glorious name,
Whose very horse stands up to challenge fame,
Illustrious Rozinante, wond'rous speed!
Not with more generous pride, or mettled speed,
His rider erst Rinaldo's Bayard bore,
Or his mad lord Orlando's Brilladore.*

*Burlador, the little Academician of Argamasilla, on
Sancho Pança.*

S O N N E T.

*See Sancho Pança, view him well,
And let this verse his praises tell.
His body was but small, 'tis true,
Yet had a soul as large as two.
No guile he knew, like some before him,
But simple as his mother bore him.
This gentle squire on gentle ass
Went gentle Rozinante's pace,
Following his lord from place to place.
To be an earl he did aspire,
And reason good for such desire:
But worth, in these ungrateful times,
To envi'd honour seldom climbs.
Vain mortals, give your wishes o'er,
And trust the flatterer, hope, no more,
Whose promises, whate'er they seem,
End in a shadow or a dream.*

Cachidiablo, Academician of Argamasilla, on the sepulture of Don Quixote.

E P I T A P H.

E P I T A P H.

*Here lies an evil-errant knight,
Well-bruis'd in many a fray,
Whose courser, Rozinante hight,
Long bore him many a way.*

*Close by his loving master's side
Lies booby Sancho Pança,
A trusty squire, of courage tri'd,
And true as ever man saw.*

*Tiquitoc, Academician of Argamasilla, on the sepulture
of Dulcinea del Toboso.*

*Dulcinea, fat and fleshy, lies
Beneath this frozen stone,
But, since to frightful death a prize,
Reduc'd to skin and bone.*

*Of goodly parentage she came,
And had the lady in her;
She was the great Don Quixote's flame,
But only death cou'd win her.*

These were all the verses that could be read: the rest, the characters being worm-eaten, were consigned to one of the Academics, to find out their meaning by conjectures. We are informed he has done it, after many lucubrations, and much pains, and that he designs to publish them, giving us hopes of *Don Quixote's* third fally.

T H E

THE P R E F A C E

To the R E A D E R.

BLESS me! with what impatience, gentle, or (it may be) simple reader, must you now be waiting for this Preface, expecting to find in it resentments, railings, and invectives against the author of the second Don Quixote; him I mean, who, it is said, was begotten in Tordefillas, and born in Tarragona! But, in truth, it is not my design to give you that satisfaction; for, though injuries are apt to awaken choler in the humblest breasts, yet in mine this rule must admit of an exception. You would have me, perhaps, call him ass, madman, and coxcomb: but I have no such design. Let his own sin be his punishment; let him chew upon it, and there let it rest.

But what I cannot forbear resenting, is, that he upbraids me with my age, and with having lost my hand; as if it were in my power to have hindered time from passing over my head, or as if my maim had been got in some drunken quarrel at a tavern, and not on the noblest occasion *, that past or present ages have seen, or future can ever hope to see. If my wounds do not reflect a lustre in the eyes of those, who barely behold them, they will however be esteemed by those, who know how I came by them; for a soldier makes a better figure dead in battle, than alive and at liberty, in running away: and I am so firmly of this opinion, that, could an impossibility be rendered practicable, and the same opportunity recalled, I would rather be again present in that prodigious action, than whole and sound without sharing in the glory of it. The scars a soldier shows in his face and breast, are stars, which guide others to the haven of honour, and to the desire of just praise. And it must be observed, that men do not write with gray hairs, but with the understanding, which is usually improved by years.

I have

* In the famous sea-fight of Lepanto.

64 PREFACE to the READER.

I have also heard, that he taxes me with envy, and describes to me, as to a mere ignorant, what envy is; and, in good truth, of the two kinds of envy, I am acquainted only with that, which is sacred, noble, and well-meaning. And this being so, as it really is, I am not inclined to reflect on any ecclesiastic, especially if he is besides dignified with the title of a familiar of the Inquisition: and if he said what he did for the sake of that person, for whom he seems to have said it, he is utterly mistaken; for I adore that gentleman's genius, and admire his works, and his constant and virtuous employment. But, in fine, I own myself obliged to this worthy author for saying, That my novels are more satirical than moral, but however that they are good; which they could not be without some share of both. Methinks, reader, you tell me, that I proceed with much circumspection, and confine myself within the limits of my own modesty, knowing, that we should not add affliction to the afflicted; and this gentleman's must needs be very great, since he dares not appear in the open field, nor in clear day-light, concealing his name, and dissembling his country, as if he had committed some crime of high-treason. If ever you should chance to fall into his company, tell him from me, that I do not think myself aggrieved: for I know very well what the temptations of the devil are, and that one of the greatest, is the putting it into a man's head, that he can write and print a book, which shall procure him as much fame as money, and as much money as fame: and, for confirmation hereof, I would have you, in a vein of mirth and pleasantry, tell him this story.

There was a madman in Sevil, who fell into one of the most ridiculous and extravagant conceits, that ever madman did in the world: which was, that he sharpened the point of a cane at one end, and, catching a dog in the street or elsewhere, he set his foot on one of the cur's hind-legs, and lifting up the other with his hand, he adjusted the cane, as well as he could, to the dog's posteriors, and blew him up as round as a ball: and, holding him in this manner, he gave him a thump or two on the guts with the palm of his hand, and let him

go,

PREFACE to the READER. 65

go, saying to the by-standers, who were always very many: Well, gentlemen, what think you? is it such an easy matter to blow up a dog? And what think you, Sir, is it such an easy matter to write a book? And if this story does not square with him, pray, kind-reader, tell him this other, which is likewise of a madman and a dog.

There was another madman in Cordova, who had a custom of carrying on his head a piece of a marble slab or stone, not very heavy, and when he lighted upon any careless cur, he got close to him, and let the weight fall plumb upon his head: the dog is in wrath, and limps away barking and howling, without so much as looking behind him for three streets length. Now it happened, that, among the dogs, upon whom he let fall the weight, one belonged to a cap-maker, who valued him mightily: down goes the stone, and hits him on the head: the poor dog raises the cry; his master seeing it resents it, and, catching up his measuring yard, out he goes to the madman, and leaves him not a whole bone in his skin: and, at every blow he gave him, he cried, Dog, rogue, what, abuse my spaniel! did you not see, barbarous villain, that my dog was a spaniel? and repeating the word spaniel very often, he dismissed the madman beaten to a jelly. The madman took his correction, and went off, and appeared not in the market-place in above a month after: at the end of which he returned with his invention, and a greater weight; and, coming to a place where a dog was lying, and observing him carefully from head to tail, and not daring to let fall the stone, he said: This is a spaniel; have a care. In short, whatever dogs he met with, though they were mastiffs or hounds, he said they were spaniels, and so let fall the slab no more. Thus, perhaps, it may fare with our historian: he may be cautious for the future how he lets fall his wit in books, which, if they are bad, are harder than rocks themselves.

Tell him also, that, as to his threatening to deprive me of my expected gain by his book, I value it not a farthing, but apply the famous interlude of the Perendenga, and answer, Long live my lord and master, and Christ
be

66 PREFACE to the READER.

be with us all. Long live the great Conde de Lemos, whose well known Christianity and liberality support me under all the strokes of adverse fortune ; and god prosper the eminent charity of his grace the archbishop of Toledo, Bernardo de Sandoval. Were there as many books written against me as there are letters in the rhimes of Mingo Rebulgo, the favour of these two princes, who, without any flattering solicitation, or any other kind of applause on my part, but merely of their own goodness, have taken upon them to patronize me, would be my sufficient protection : And I esteem myself happier and richer, than if fortune by ordinary means had placed me on her highest pinnacle. The poor man may be honourable, but not the vicious : poverty may cloud nobility, but not wholly obscure it : and virtue, as it shines by its own light, though seen through the difficulties and crannies of poverty, so it always gains the esteem, and consequently the protection, of great and noble minds.

Say no more to him, nor will I say more to you, only to let you know, that this second part of Don Quixote, which I offer to you, is cut by the same hand, and out of the same piece, with the first, and that herein I present you with Don Quixote at his full length, and, at last, fairly dead and buried, that no one may presume to bring fresh accusation against him, those already brought being enough. Let it suffice also, that a writer of some credit has given an account of his ingenious follies, resolving not to take up the subject any more : for too much, even of a good thing, lessens it in our esteem ; and scarcity, even of an indifferent, makes it of some estimation.

*I had forgot to tell you, that I have almost finished the *Perfiles*, and that you may soon expect the second part of the *Galatea*. Farewel.*

THE

THE
LIFE and EXPLOITS
Of the ingenious GENTLEMAN
DON QUIXOTE
DE LA MANCHA.
PART THE SECOND.

BOOK I.

CHAPTER I.

*Of what passed between the Priest, the Barber, and
Don Quixote, concerning his indisposition.*

CID HAMET BEN-ENGELI relates, in the second part of this history, and third sally of *Don Quixote*, that the priest and the barber were almost a whole month without seeing him, lest they should renew and bring back to his mind the remembrance of things past. Yet they did not therefore forbear visiting his niece and his house-keeper, charging them to take care and make much of him, and to give him comforting things to eat, such as are proper for the heart and brain, from whence, in all appearance, his disorder proceeded. They said, they did so, and would continue so to do with all possible care and goodwill; for they perceived, that their master was ever and anon discovering signs of being in his right mind: whereat the priest and the barber were greatly pleased,
as

as thinking they had hit upon the right course in bringing him home enchanted upon the ox-waggon, as is related in the last chapter of the first part of this no less great than exact history. They resolved therefore to visit him, and make trial of his amendment; tho' they reckoned it almost impossible he should be cured, and agreed between them not to touch in the least upon the subject of knight-errantry, lest they should endanger the ripping up a sore that was yet so tender.

In fine, they made him a visit, and found him sitting on his bed, clad in a waistcoat of green bays, with a red *Toledo* bonnet on his head, and so lean and shrivelled, that he seemed as if he was reduced to a mere mummy. They were received by him with much kindness: they enquired after his health; and he gave them an account both of it and of himself with much judgment, and in very elegant expressions. In the course of their conversation, they fell upon matters of state, and forms of government, correcting this abuse and condemning that, reforming one custom and banishing another; each of the three setting up himself for a new legislator, a modern *Lycurgus*, or a spick-and-span new *Solon*: and in such manner did they new-model the commonwealth, that one would have thought they had clapped it into a forge, and taken it out quite altered from what it was before. *Don Quixote* delivered himself with so much good sense on all the subjects they touched upon, that the two examiners undoubtedly believed he was entirely well, and in his perfect senses. The niece and the house-keeper were present at the conversation, and, seeing their master give such proofs of a sound mind, thought they could never sufficiently thank heaven. But the priest, changing his former purpose of not touching upon matters of chivalry, was now resolved to make a thorough experiment whether *Don Quixote* was perfectly recovered, or not: and so, from one thing to another, he came at length to tell him some news lately brought from court; and, among other things, said, it was given out for certain, that the *Turk* was coming down with a powerful fleet, and that it was not known what his de-

sign was, nor where so great a storm would burst; that all *Christendom* was alarmed thereat, as it used to be almost every year; and that the king had already provided for the security of the coasts of *Naples* and *Sicily*, and of the island of *Malta*. To this *Don Quixote* replied: His majesty has done like a most prudent warrior, in providing in time for the defence of his dominions, that the enemy may not surprize him: but, if my counsel might be taken, I would advise him to make use of a precaution, which his majesty is at present very far from thinking of. Scarcely had the priest heard this, when he said within himself: god defend thee, poor *Don Quixote*! for methinks thou art falling headlong from the top of thy madness down to the profound abyss of thy folly. But the barber, who had already made the same reflection as the priest had done, asked *Don Quixote* what precaution it was that he thought so proper to be taken; for, perhaps, it was such, as might be put into the list of the many impertinent admonitions usually given to princes. Mine, goodman shaver, answered *Don Quixote*, shall not be of that sort. I meant no harm, replied the barber, but only that experience has shewn, that all or most of the pieces of advice, people give his majesty, are either impracticable or absurd, or to the prejudice of the king or kingdom. True, answered *Don Quixote*; but mine is neither impracticable nor absurd, but the most easy, the most just, the most feazable and expeditious, that can enter into the imagination of any projector. Signor *Don Quixote*, quoth the priest, you keep us too long in suspense. I have no mind, replied *Don Quixote*, it should be told here now, and to-morrow by day-break get to the ears of the lords of the privy-council, and so somebody else should run away with the thanks and the reward of my labour. I give you my word, said the barber, here and before god, that I will not reveal what your worship shall say either to king or to rook¹, or to any man upon earth: an oath, which I learned from the romance of the priest, in the preface whereof he tells the king of the thief

¹ In allusion to the game at chess, so common then in *Spain*.

thief that robbed him of the hundred pistoles, and his ambling mule. I know not the history, said *Don Quixote*; but I presume, the oath is a good one, because I am persuaded master barber is an honest man. Though he were not, said the priest, I will make it good, and engage for him, that, as to this business, he will talk no more of it than a dumb man, under what penalty you shall think fit. And who will be bound for your reverence, master priest? said *Don Quixote*. My profession, answered the priest, which obliges me to keep a secret. Body of me then, said *Don Quixote*, is there any thing more to be done, but that his majesty cause proclamation to be made, that all the knights-errant, who are now wandering about *Spain*, do, on a certain day, repair to court? for should there come but half a dozen, there may happen to be among them one, who may be able alone to destroy the whole power of the *Turk*. Pray, gentlemen, be attentive, and go along with me. Is it a new thing for a knight-errant singly to defeat an army of two hundred thousand men, as if they had all but one throat, or were made of sugar paste? Pray, tell me, how many histories are full of these wonders? How unlucky is it for me (I will not say for any body else) that the famous *Don Belianis*, or some one of the numerous race of *Amadis de Gaul*, is not now in being! for were any one of them alive at this day, and were to confront the *Turk*, in good faith, I would not farm his winnings. But god will provide for his people, and send some body or other, if not as strong as the former knights-errant, at least not inferior to them in courage: god knows my meaning; I say no more. Alas! quoth the niece at this instant, may I perish if my uncle has not a mind to turn knight-errant again. Whereupon *Don Quixote* said; A knight-errant I will live and die, and let the *Turk* come down, or up, when he pleases, and as powerful as he can: I say again, god knows my meaning. Here the barber said: I beseech your worship to give me leave to tell a short story of what happened once in *Sevil*: for it comes in so pat to the present purpose,

pose, that I must needs tell it. *Don Quixote* and the priest gave him leave, and the rest lent him their attention; and he began thus.

A certain man was put by his relations into the madhouse of *Sevil*, for having lost his wits. He had taken his degrees in the canon law in the university of *Ossuna*; and had he taken them in that of *Salamanca*, most people think he would nevertheless have been mad. This graduate, after some years confinement, took it into his head that he was in his right senses and perfect understanding; and with this conceit he wrote to the archbishop, beseeching him with great earnestness, and seemingly good reasons, that he would be pleased to send and deliver him from that miserable confinement in which he lived; since, through the mercy of god, he had recovered his lost senses; adding, that his relations, that they might enjoy part of his estate, kept him still there, and, in spite of truth, would have him to be mad till his dying-day. The archbishop, prevailed upon by his many letters, all penned with sense and judgment, ordered one of his chaplains to inform himself from the rector of the madhouse, whether what the licenciado had written to him was true, and also to talk with the madman, and, if it appeared that he was in his senses, to take him out, and set him at liberty. The chaplain did so, and the rector assured him the man was still mad; for though he sometimes talked like a man of excellent sense, he would in the end break out into such distracted flights, as more than counterbalanced his former rational discourse; as he might experience by conversing with him. The chaplain resolved to make the trial, and accordingly talked above an hour with the madman, who, in all that time, never returned a disjointed or extravagant answer: on the contrary he spoke with such sobriety, and so much to the purpose, that the chaplain was forced to believe he was in his right mind. Among other things, he said, that the rector misrepresented him, for the sake of the presents his relations sent him, that he might say he was still mad, and had only some lucid intervals: for his great estate

was

was the greatest enemy he had in his misfortune, since, to enjoy that, his enemies had recourse to fraud, and pretended to doubt of the mercy of god toward him in restoring him from the condition of a brute to that of a man. In short, he talked in such a manner, that he made the rector to be suspected, his relations thought covetous and unnatural, and himself so discreet, that the chaplain determined to carry him away with him, that the archbishop himself might see, and lay his finger upon the truth of this business. The good chaplain, possessed with this opinion, desired the rector to order the cloaths to be given him, which he wore when he was brought in. The rector again desired him to take care what he did, since, without all doubt, the licenciante was still mad. But the precautions and remonstrances of the rector availed nothing towards hindering the chaplain from carrying him away. The rector, seeing it was by order of the archbishop, obeyed. They put the licenciante on his cloaths, which were fresh and decent. And now finding himself stripped of his madman's weeds, and habited like a rational creature, he begged of the chaplain that he would, for charity's sake, permit him to take leave of the madmen his companions. The chaplain said, he would bear him company, and take a view of the lunatics confined in that house. So up stairs they went, and with them some other persons, who happened to be present. And the licenciante, approaching a kind of cage, in which lay one that was outrageously mad, though at that time he was still and quiet, said to him: Have you any service, dear brother, to command me? I am returning to my own house, god having been pleased, of his infinite goodness and mercy, without any desert of mine, to restore me to my senses. I am now sound and well; for with god nothing is impossible. Put great trust and confidence in him: for, since he has restored me to my former state, he will also restore you, if you trust in him. I will take care to send you some refreshing victuals; and be sure to eat of them: for I must needs tell you, I find, having experienced it myself, that all our distractions proceed from

from our stomachs being empty, and our brains filled with wind. Take heart, take heart; for despondency under misfortunes impairs our health, and hastens our death. All this discourse of the licenciado's was overheard by another madman, who was in an opposite cell: and raising himself up from an old mat, whereon he had thrown himself stark-naked, he demanded aloud, who it was that was going away so well recovered and so sober? It is I, brother, answered the licenciado, that am going; for I need stay no longer here, and am infinitely thankful to heaven for having bestowed so great a blessing upon me. Take heed, licenciado, what you say, let not the devil delude you, replied the madman: stir not a foot, but keep where you are, and you will spare yourself the trouble of being brought back. I know, replied the licenciado, that I am perfectly well, and shall have no more occasion to visit the station-churches¹. You well! said the madman; we shall soon see that: farewell! but I swear by *Jupiter*, whose majesty I represent on earth, that, for this offence alone, which *Sevil* is now committing, in carrying you out of this house, and judging you to be in your senses, I am determined to inflict such a signal punishment on this city, that the memory thereof shall endure for ever and ever, amen. Know you not, little crazed licenciado, that I can do it, since, as I say, I am thundering *Jupiter*, who hold in my hands the flaming bolts, with which I can, and use, to threaten and destroy the world? But in one thing only will I chastise this ignorant people; and that is, there shall no rain fall on this town, or in all its district, for three whole years, reckoning from the day and hour in which this threatening is denounced. You at liberty! you recovered and in your senses! and I a madman, I distempered, and in bonds! I will no more rain, than I will hang myself. All the by-standers were very attentive to the madman's discourse: but our

¹ Certain churches, with indulgences, appointed to be visited, either for pardon of sins, or for procuring blessings. Madmen, probably, in their lucid intervals, were obliged to this exercise.

licenciate, turning himself to our chaplain, and holding him by both hands, said to him : Be in no pain, good sir, nor make any account of what this madman has said ; for, if he is *Jupiter* and will not rain, I, who am *Neptune*, the father and god of the waters, will rain as often as I please, and whenever there shall be occasion. To which the chaplain answered : However, signor *Neptune*, it will not be convenient at present to provoke signor *Jupiter* : therefore, pray, stay where you are ; for some other time, when we have a better opportunity and more leisure, we will come for you. The rector and the by-standers laughed ; which put the chaplain half out of countenance. They disrobed the licenciate, who remained where he was ; and there is an end of the story.

This then, master barber, said *Don Quixote*, is the story, which comes in here so pat, that you could not forbear telling it ? Ah ! signor cut-beard, signor cut-beard ! he must be blind indeed who cannot see through a sieve. Is it possible you should be ignorant, that comparisons made between understanding and understanding, valour and valour, beauty and beauty, and family and family, are always odious and ill taken ? I, master barber, am not *Neptune*, god of the waters ; nor do I set myself up for a wise man, being really not so : all I aim at is, to convince the world of its error in not reviving those happy times, in which the order of knight-errantry flourished. But this our degenerate age deserves not to enjoy so great a blessing as that, which former ages could boast, when knights-errant took upon themselves the defence of kingdoms, the protection of orphans, the relief of damsels, the chastisement of the haughty, and the reward of the humble. Most of the knights now in fashion make a rustling rather in damasks, brocades, and other rich stuffs, than in coats of mail. You have now no knight, that will lie in the open field, exposed to the rigour of the heavens, in compleat armour from head to foot : no one now, that, without stirring his feet out of his stirrups, and leaning upon his lance, takes a short
nap,

nap, like the knights-errant of old times : no one now, that, issuing out of this forest, ascends that mountain, and from thence traverses a barren and desert shore of the sea, which is most commonly stormy and tempestuous ; where finding on the beach a small skiff, without oars, sail, mast, or any kind of tackle, he boldly throws himself into it, exposing himself to the implacable billows of the profound sea, which now mount him up to the skies, and then cast him down to the abyss : and he, opposing his courage to the irresistible hurricane, when he least dreams of it, finds himself above three thousand leagues from the place where he embarked ; and, leaping on the remote and unknown shore, encounters accidents worthy to be written, not on parchment, but brass. But now-a-days sloth triumphs over diligence, idleness over labour, vice over virtue, arrogance over bravery, and the theory over the practice of arms, which only lived and flourished in those golden ages, and in those knights-errant. For, pray, tell me, who was more civil, and more valiant, than the famous *Amadis de Gaul* ? who more discreet than *Palmerin of England* ? who more affable and obliging than *Tirant the white* ? who more gallant than *Lisuarte of Greece* ? who gave or received more cuts and slashes than *Don Belianis* ? who was more intrepid than *Perion of Gaul* ? who more enterprising than *Felixmarte of Hyrcania* ? who more sincere than *Esplandian* ? who more daring than *Don Cirongilio of Thrace* ? who more brave than *Rodamonte* ? who more prudent than king *Sobrino* ? who more intrepid than *Rinaldo* ? who more invincible than *Orlando* ? and who more courteous than *Rogero*, from whom, according to *Turpin's Cosmography*, are descended the present dukes of *Ferrara* ? All these, and others that I could name, master priest, were knights errant, and the light and glory of chivalry. Now these, or such as these, are the men I would advise his majesty to employ ; by which means he would be sure to be well served, and would save a vast expence, and the *Turk* might go tear his beard for very madness : and so I will stay at home,

since the chaplain does not fetch me out ; and if *Jupiter*, as the barber has said, will not rain, here am I, who will rain whenever I think proper. I say all this, to let goodman bason see that I understand him.

In truth, Signor *Don Quixote*, said the barber, I meant no harm in what I said : so help me god, as my intention was good ; therefore your worship ought not to take it ill. Whether I ought to take it ill or no, said *Don Quixote*, is best known to myself. Well, said the priest, I have hardly spoken a word yet, and I would willingly get rid of a scruple, which gnaws and disturbs my conscience, occasioned by what Signor *Don Quixote* has just now said. You have my leave, master priest, for greater matters, answered *Don Quixote*, and so you may out with your scruple : for there is no pleasure in going with a scrupulous conscience. With this licence then, answered the priest, my scruple, I say, is, that I can by no means persuade myself, that the multitude of knights errant, your worship has mentioned, were really and truly persons of flesh and blood in the world : on the contrary, I imagine, that it is all fiction, fable, and a lye, and dreams told by men awake, or, to speak more properly, half asleep. This is another error, answered *Don Quixote*, into which many have fallen, who do not believe, that ever there were any such knights in the world ; and I have frequently, in company with divers persons, and upon fundry occasions, endeavoured to confute this common mistake. Sometimes I have failed in my design, and sometimes succeeded, supporting it on the shoulders of a truth, which is so certain, that I can almost say, these eyes of mine have seen *Amadis de Gaul*, who was tall of stature, of a fair complexion, with a well-set beard, though black ; his aspect between mild and stern ; a man of few words, not easily provoked, and soon pacified. And in like manner as I have described *Amadis*, I fancy I could paint and delineate all the knights errant, that are found in all the histories in the world. For apprehending as I do, that they were such as their histories represent them, one may, by the exploits they performed, and their dispo-

dispositions, give a good philosophical guess at their features, their complexions, and their statures. Pray, good Signor *Don Quixote*, quoth the barber, how big, think you, might the giant *Morgante* be? As to the business of giants, answered *Don Quixote*, it is a controverted point, whether there really have been such in the world, or not: but the holy scripture, which cannot deviate a tittle from truth, shews us there have been such, giving us the history of that huge *Philistin Goliath*, who was seven cubits and a half high, which is a prodigious stature. Besides, in the island of *Sicily* there have been found thigh-bones and shoulder-bones so large, that their size demonstrates, that those, to whom they belonged, were giants, and as big as large steeples, as geometry evinces beyond all doubt. But for all that I cannot say with certainty, how big *Morgante* was, though I fancy he could not be extremely tall: and I am inclined to this opinion by finding in the story, wherein his achievements are particularly mentioned, that he often slept under a roof; and since he found a house large enough to hold him, it is plain, he was not himself of an unmeasurable bigness. That is true, quoth the priest, who, being delighted to hear him talk so wildly and extravagantly, asked him, what he thought of the faces of *Rinaldo* of *Montalvan*, *Orlando*, and the rest of the twelve peers of *France*, since they were all knights-errant. Of *Rinaldo*, answered *Don Quixote*, I dare boldly affirm, he was broad-faced, of a ruddy complexion, large rowling eyes, punctilious, choleric to an extreme, and a friend to rogues and profligate fellows. Of *Roldan*, or *Rotolando*, or *Orlando* (for histories give him all these names) I am of opinion, and assert, that he was of a middling stature, broad-shouldered, bandy-legged, brown-complexioned, carroty-bearded, hairy-bodied, of a threatening aspect, sparing of speech, yet very civil and well bred. If *Orlando*, replied the priest, was no finer a gentleman than you have described him, no wonder that madam *Angelica the fair* disdained and forsook him for the gaiety, sprightliness, and good-humour of the downy-chinned little *Moor*, with whom

she had an affair ; and she acted discreetly in preferring the softness of *Medoro* to the roughness of *Orlando*. That *Angelica*, master priest, replied *Don Quixote*, was a light, gossiping, wanton hussy, and left the world as full of her impertinencies, as of the fame of her beauty. She undervalued a thousand gentlemen, a thousand valiant and wise men, and took up with a paultry beardless page, with no other estate, or reputation, than what the affection he preserved for his friend could give him. Even the great extoller of her beauty, the famous *Ariosto*, either not daring, or not caring, to celebrate what befel this lady after her pitiful intrigue, the subject not being over modest, left her with these verses :

*Another bard may sing in better strain,
How he Cataya's scepter did obtain.*

And without doubt this was a kind of prophecy ; for poets are also called *Vates*, that is to say, diviners. And this truth is plainly seen : for, since that time a famous *Andalusian* poet ¹ has bewailed and sung her tears ; and another famous and singular *Castilian* poet ² has celebrated her beauty.

Pray tell me, Signor *Don Quixote*, quoth the barber at this instant, Has no poet written a satire upon this lady *Angelica*, among so many who have sung her praises ? I verily believe, answered *Don Quixote*, that, if *Sacripante* or *Orlando* had been poets, they would long ago have paid her off ; for it is peculiar and natural to poets, disdained or rejected by their false mistresses, or such as were feigned in effect by those who chose them to be the sovereign ladies of their thoughts, to revenge themselves by satires and lampoons : a vengeance certainly unworthy a generous spirit. But hitherto I have not met with any defamatory verses against the lady *Angelica*, though she turned the world upside down. Strange, indeed ! quoth the priest. But now they heard the voice of the house-keeper and the niece, who had already quitted the conversation, and

were

¹ *Luis Barabona de Solo.*

² *Lopez de Vega.*

were bawling aloud in the court-yard ; and they all ran towards the noise.

C H A P. II.

Which treats of the notable quarrel between Sancho Pança, and Don Quixote's niece and house-keeper, with other pleasant occurrences.

THE history relates, that the out-cry, which *Don Quixote*, the priest, and the barber heard, was raised by the niece and the house-keeper, who were defending the door against *Sancho Pança*, who was striving to get in to see *Don Quixote*. What would this paunch-gutted fellow have in this house ? said they : get you to your own, brother ; for it is you, and no other, by whom our master is seduced, and led astray, and carried rambling up and down the high-ways. To which *Sancho* replied : Mistress house-keeper for the devil, it is I that am seduced and led astray, and carried rambling up and down the high-ways, and not your master : it was he who led me this dance, and you deceive yourselves half in half. He inveigled me from home with fair speeches, promising me an island, which I still hope for. May the damned islands choak thee, accursed *Sancho*, answered the niece ; and, pray, what are islands ? are they any thing eatable, glutton, cormorant as thou art ? They are not to be eaten, replied *Sancho*, but governed, and better governments than any four cities, or four justiceships at court. For all that, said the house-keeper, you come not in here, thou sack of mischiefs, and bundle of rogueries ! get you home and govern there ; go, plow and cart, and cease pretending to islands, or highlands. The priest and the barber took a great deal of pleasure in hearing this dialogue between the three. But *Don Quixote*, fearing lest *Sancho* should blunder out some unseasonable follies, and touch upon some points not very much to his credit, called him to him, and ordered the women to hold their tongues, and let him in. *Sancho* entered, and the priest and

the barber took their leave of *Don Quixote*, of whose cure they despaired, perceiving how bent he was upon his wild vagaries, and how intoxicated with the folly of his unhappy chivalries. And therefore the priest said to the barber: You will see, neighbour, when we least think of it, our gentleman take the other flight. I make no doubt of that, answered the barber: yet I do not admire so much at the madness of the knight, as at the stupidity of the squire, who is so possessed with the belief of the business of the island, that I am persuaded all the demonstrations in the world cannot beat it out of his noddle. God help them, said the priest; and let us be upon the watch, and we shall see the drift of this machine of absurdities, of such a knight, and such a squire, who one would think were cast in the same mould; and indeed the madness of the master without the follies of the man would not be worth a farthing. True, quoth the barber, and I should be very glad to know what they two are now talking of. I lay my life, answered the priest, the niece or the house-keeper will tell us all by and by; for they are not of a temper to forbear listening.

In the mean while *Don Quixote* had shut himself up in his chamber with *Sancho* only, and said to him: I am very sorry, *Sancho*, you should say, and stand in it, that it was I who drew you out of your cottage, when you know, that I myself stayed not in my own house. We set out together; we went on together; and together we performed our travels. We both ran the same fortune, and the same chance. If once you were tossed in a blanket, an hundred times have I been threshed; and herein only have I had the advantage of you. And reason good, answered *Sancho*; for, as your worship holds, misfortunes are more properly annexed to the knights-errant themselves than to their squires. You are mistaken, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*; for, according to the saying, *Quando caput dolet* &c. I understand no other language than my own, replied *Sancho*. I mean, said *Don Quixote*, that, when the head akes, all the members ake also; and therefore I, being your master and lord, am your head, and you are a part of me,

me, as being my servant : and for this reason the ill that does, or shall affect me, must affect you also ; and so on the contrary. Indeed, quoth *Sancho*, it should be so : but when I, as a limb, was tossed in the blanket, my head stood on t'other side of the pales, beholding me frisking in the air, without feeling any pain at all ; and since the members are bound to grieve at the ills of the head, that also in requital ought to do the like for them. Would you insinuate now, *Sancho*, replied *Don Quixote*, that I was not grieved when I saw you tossed ? If that be your meaning, say no more, nor so much as think of it ; for I felt more pain then in my mind, than you did in your body. But no more of this at present ; for a time will come when we may ponder, and set this matter upon its right bottom. In the meantime, tell me, friend *Sancho*, what do folks say of me about this same town ? what opinion has the common people of me ? what think the gentlemen, and what the cavaliers ? what is said of my prowess, what of my exploits, and what of my courtesy ? What discourse is there of the scheme I have undertaken, to revive and restore to the world the long-forgotten order of chivalry ? In short, *Sancho*, I would have you tell me whatever you have heard concerning these matters : and this you must do, without adding to the good, or taking from the bad, one tittle : for it is the part of faithful vassals to tell their lords the truth in its native simplicity, and proper figure, neither enlarged by adulation, nor diminished out of any other idle regard. And I would have you, *Sancho*, learn by the way, that if naked truth could come to the ears of princes, without the disguise of flattery, we should see happier days, and former ages would be deemed as *iron*, in comparison of ours, which would then be esteemed the *golden age*. Let this advertisement, *Sancho*, be a caution to you to give me an ingenuous and faithful account of what you know concerning the matters I have enquired about. That I will with all my heart, Sir, answered *Sancho*, on condition that your worship shall not be angry at what I say, since you will have me shew

you the naked truth, without arraying her in any other dress than that in which she appeared to me. I will in no wise be angry, replied *Don Quixote*: you may speak freely, *Sancho*, and without any circumlocution. First and foremost then, said *Sancho*, the common-people take your worship for a downright madman, and me for no less a fool. The gentlemen say, that, not containing yourself within the bounds of gentility, you have taken upon you the stile of *Don*, and invaded the dignity of knighthood, with no more than a paultry vineyard, and a couple of acres of land, with a tatter behind and another before. The cavaliers say, they would not have the gentlemen set themselves in opposition to them, especially those gentlemen esquires, who clout their shoes, and take up the fallen stitches of their black stockings with green silk. That, said *Don Quixote*, is no reflexion upon me; for I always go well clad, and my cloaths never patched: a little torn they may be, but more so thro' the fretting of my armour, than by length of time. As to what concerns your valour, courtesy, achievements, and your undertaking, quoth *Sancho*, there are very different opinions. Some say, mad, but humorous; others, valiant, but unfortunate; others, courteous, but impertinent: and thus they run divisions upon us, 'till they leave neither your worship nor me a whole bone in our skins. Take notice, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, that wherever virtue is found in any eminent degree, it is always persecuted. Few, or none, of the famous men of times past escaped being calumniated by their malicious contemporaries. *Julius Cæsar*, the most courageous, the most prudent, and most valiant captain, was noted for being ambitious, and somewhat unclean both in his apparel and his manners. *Alexander*, whose exploits gained him the surname of *Great*, is said to have had a little smack of the drunkard. *Hercules*, with all his labours, is censured for being lascivious and effeminate. *Don Galaor*, brother of *Amadis de Gaul*, was taxed with being quarrelsome; and his brother with being a whimperer. So that, O *Sancho*, amidst so many calumnies cast on the worthy,

mine

mine may very well pass, if they are no more than those you have mentioned. Body of my father! there lies the jest now, replied *Sancho*. What then, is there more yet behind? said *Don Quixote*. The tail remains still to be slayed, quoth *Sancho*: all hitherto has been tarts and cheesecakes: but if your worship has a mind to know the very bottom of these calumnies people bestow upon you, I will bring one hither presently, who shall tell you them all, without missing a tittle: for last night arrived the son of *Bartholomew Carrasco*, who comes from studying at *Salamanca*, having taken the degree of batchelor; and when I went to bid him welcome home, he told me, that the history of your worship is already printed in books, under the title of the *Ingenious gentleman Don Quixote de la Mancha*; and he says, it mentions me too by my very name of *Sancho Pança*, and the lady *Dulcinea del Toboso*, and several other things, which passed between us two only; insomuch that I crossed myself out of pure amazement, to think how the historian, who writ it, could come to know them. Depend upon it, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, that the author of this our history must be some sage enchanter; for nothing is hid from them that they have a mind to write. A sage and an enchanter! quoth *Sancho*; why, the batchelor *Sampson Carrasco* (for that is his name) says, the author of this history is called *Cid Hamete Berengena*. That is a *Moorish* name, answered *Don Quixote*. It may be so, replied *Sancho*; for I have heard, that your *Moors* for the most part are lovers of *Berengenas*¹. *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, you must mistake the surname of that same *Cid*, which in *Arabic* signifies a lord². It may be so, answered *Sancho*; but if your worship will have me bring him hither, I will fly to fetch him. You will do me a singular pleasure, friend, said *Don Quixote*; for I am surprized at what you have:

1 A sort of fruit introduced by the *Moors*, to be boiled with, or without, flesh. *Sancho* mistakes *Berengena* for *Ben-engeli*.

2 The *Arabic* name *Cid* does not properly signify a Lord, but, a Chieftain or Commander.

have told me, and I shall not eat a bit that will do me good, 'till I am informed of all. Then I am going for him, answered *Sancho* ; and leaving his master, he went to seek the batchelor, with whom he returned soon after : and between them three there passed a most pleasant conversation.

C H A P. III.

Of the pleasant conversation, which passed between Don Quixote, Sancho Pança, and the batchelor Sampson Carraasco.

DON QUIXOTE remained over and above thoughtful, expecting the coming of the batchelor *Carraasco*, from whom he hoped to hear some account of himself, printed in a book, as *Sancho* had told him, and could not persuade himself that such a history could be extant, since the blood of the enemies he had slain was still reeking on his sword-blade ; and could people expect his high feats of arms should be already in print ? However, at last he concluded, that some sage, either friend or enemy, by art magic had sent them to the press : if a friend, to aggrandize and extol them above the most signal achievements of any knight-errant ; if an enemy, to annihilate and sink them below the meanest, that ever were written of any squire ; although (quoth he to himself) the feats of squires never were written. But if it should prove true, that such a history was really extant, since it was the history of a knight-errant, it must of necessity be sublime, lofty, illustrious, magnificent, and true. This thought afforded him some comfort : but he lost it again upon considering, that the author was a *Moor*, as was plain from the name of *Cid*, and that no truth at all could be expected from the *Moors*, who were all impostors, lyars, and visionaries. He was apprehensive, he might treat of his love with some indecency, which might redound to the disparagement and prejudice of the modesty of his lady *Dulcinea del Toboso*. He wished, he might find a faithful representation of
his

his own constancy, and the decorum he had always invariably preserved towards her, slighting, for her sake, queens, empresses, and damsels of all degrees, and bridling the violent impulses of natural desire. Tossed and perplexed with these and a thousand other imaginations, *Sancho* and *Carraasco* found him; and *Don Quixote* received the batchelor with much courtesy.

This batchelor, though his name was *Sampson*, was none of the biggest, but an arch wag; of a wan complexion, but of a very good understanding. He was about twenty four years of age, round faced, flat-nosed, and wide-mouthed: all signs of his being of a waggish disposition, and a lover of wit and humour; as he made appear at seeing *Don Quixote*, before whom he threw himself upon his knees, and said to him: Signor *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, let me have the honour of kissing your grandeur's hand; for, by the habit of *St. Peter*, which I wear, though I have yet taken no other degrees towards holy orders but the four first, your worship is one of the famousest knights-errant that have been, or shall be, upon the whole circumference of the earth. A blessing light on *Cid Hamet Ben-engeli*, who has left us the history of your mighty deeds; and blessings upon blessings light on that virtuoso, who took care to have them translated out of *Arabic* into our vulgar *Castilian*, for the universal entertainment of all sorts of people! *Don Quixote* made him rise, and said: It seems then it is true, that my history is really extant, and that he, who composed it, was a *Moor* and a sage. So true it is, Sir, said *Sampson*, that I verily believe, there are, this very day, above twelve thousand books published of that history: witness *Portugal*, *Barcelona*, and *Valencia*, where they have been printed; and there is a rumour that it is now printing at *Antwerp*; and I foresee, that no nation or language will be without a translation of it. Here *Don Quixote* said: One of the things, which ought to afford the highest satisfaction to a virtuous and eminent man, is, to find, while he is living, his good name published and in print, in every body's mouth, and in every body's hand: I say, his good name;

name; for if it be the contrary, no death can equal it. If fame and a good name are to carry it, said the batchelor, your worship alone bears away the palm from all knights-errant: for the *Moor* in his language, and the *Castilian* in his, have taken care to paint to the life that gallant deportment of your worship, that greatness of soul in confronting dangers, that constancy in adversity, and patient enduring of mischances, that modesty and continence in amours, so very platonic, as those between your worship and my lady *Donna Dulcinea del Toboso*. *Sancho* here said: I never heard my lady *Dulcinea* called *Donna* before, but only plain *Dulcinea del Toboso*; so that here the history is already mistaken. That objection is of no importance, answered *Carraasco*. No certainly, replied *Don Quixote*: but, pray, tell me, Signor batchelor, which exploits of mine are most esteemed in this same history? As to that, answered the batchelor, there are different opinions, as there are different tastes. Some are for the adventure of the wind-mills, which your worship took for so many *Briareuses* and giants: others adhere to that of the fulling hammers: these to the description of the two armies, which afterwards fell out to be two flocks of sheep: another cries up that of the dead body which was carrying to be interred at *Segovia*: one says the setting the galley-slaves at liberty was beyond them all: another, that none can be compared to that of the two *Benedictine* giants, with the combat of the valorous *Biscainer*. Pray tell me, Signor batchelor, quoth *Sancho*, is there among the rest the adventure of the *Yangueses*, when our good *Roxinante* had a longing after the forbidden fruit? The sage, answered *Sampson*, has left nothing at the bottom of the inkhorn: he inserts and remarks every thing, even to the capers *Sancho* cut in the blanket. I cut no capers in the blanket, answered *Sancho*: in the air I own I did, and more than I desired. In my opinion, quoth *Don Quixote*, there is no history in the world that has not its ups and downs, especially those which treat of chivalry; for such can never be altogether filled with prosperous events. For all that,

replied

replied the batchelor, some, who have read the history, say, they should have been better pleased, if the authors thereof had forgot some of those numberless drubbings given to Signor *Don Quixote* in different encounters. Therein, quoth *Sancho*, consists the truth of the history. They might indeed as well have omitted them, said *Don Quixote*, since there is no necessity of recording those actions, which do not change nor alter the truth of the story, and especially if they redound to the discredit of the hero. In good faith, *Aeneas* was not altogether so pious as *Virgil* paints him, nor *Ulysses* so prudent as *Homer* describes him. It is true, replied *Sampson*; but it is one thing to write as a poet, and another to write as an historian. The poet may say, or sing, not as things were, but as they ought to have been; but the historian must pen them, not as they ought to have been, but as they really were, without adding to, or diminishing any thing from the truth. Well, if it be so, that Signor *Moor* is in a vein of telling truth, quoth *Sancho*, there is no doubt but, among my master's rib roastings, mine are to be found also: for they never took measure of his worship's shoulders, but at the same time they took the dimensions of my whole body: but why should I wonder at this, since, as the self-same master of mine says, the members must partake of the ailments of the head. *Sancho*, you are a sly wag, answered *Don Quixote*: in faith, you want not for a memory, when you have a mind to have one. Though I had never so much a mind to forget the drubs I have received, quoth *Sancho*, the tokens that are still fresh on my ribs would not let me. Hold your peace, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, and do not interrupt Signor batchelor, whom I intreat to go on, and tell me what is farther said of me in the aforesaid history. And of me too, quoth *Sancho*; for I hear that I am one of the principal parsons in it. Persons, not parsons, friend *Sancho*, quoth *Sampson*. What! another corrector of hard words! quoth *Sancho*; if this be the trade, we shall never have done. Let me die, *Sancho*, answered the batchelor, if you are not the second person of the history:

history : nay, there are some, who had rather hear you talk, than the finest fellow of them all: though there are also some, who say, you was a little too credulous in the matter of the government of that island promised you by Signor *Don Quixote* here present. There is still sun-shine on the walls, quoth *Don Quixote*, and, when *Sancho* is more advanced in age, with the experience that years give, he will be better qualified to be a governor than he is now. Before god, Sir, quoth *Sancho*, if I am not fit to govern an island at these years, I shall not know how to govern it at the age of *Methusalem*. The mischief of it is, that the said island sticks I know not where, and not in my want of a head-piece to govern it. Recommend it to god, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*; for all will be well, and perhaps better than you think; for a leaf stirs not on the tree without the will of god. That is true, quoth *Sampson*; and if it pleases god, *Sancho* will not want a thousand islands to govern, much less one. I have seen governors ere now, quoth *Sancho*, who, in my opinion, do not come up to the sole of my shoe; and yet they are called *your lordship*, and are served in plate. Those are not governors of islands, replied *Sampson*, but of other governments more manageable; for those, who govern islands, must at least understand grammar. Gramercy for that, quoth *Sancho*; it is all *Greek* to me, for I know nothing of the matter ¹. But let us leave the business of governments in the hands of god, and let him dispose of me so as I may be most instrumental in his service: I say, Signor batchelor *Sampson Carrasco*, I am infinitely pleased that the author of the history has spoken of me in such a manner, that what he says of me is not at all tiresome; for, upon the faith of a trusty squire, had he said any thing of me unbecoming an old christian ² as I am, the deaf should have heard it. That would

¹ Literally, 'For the *grama* (*grafs*) I could venture on it, but for the *tica*, I neither put in nor take out, for I understand it not.' The reader will easily see the necessity of deviating here from the original.

² In opposition to those descended from *Moors*, or *Jews*.

would be working miracles, answered *Sampson*. Miracles, or no miracles, quoth *Sancho*, let every one take heed how they talk, or write, of people, and not set down at random the first thing that comes into their imagination. One of the blots people charge upon that history, said the batchelor, is, that the author has inserted in it a novel intituled *The curious impertinent*; not that it is bad in itself, or ill-written, but for having no relation to that place, nor any thing to do with the story of his worship Signor *Don Quixote*. I will lay a wager, replied *Sancho*, the son of a bitch has made a jumble of fish and flesh together. I aver then, said *Don Quixote*, that the author of my history could not be a sage, but some ignorant pretender, who, at random, and without any judgment, has set himself to write it, come of it what would: like *Orbaneja*, the painter of *Ubeda*, who, being asked what he painted, answered, As it may hit. Sometimes he would paint a cock after such a guise, and so preposterously designed, that he was forced to write under it in *Gothic* characters, *This is a cock*: and thus it will fare with my history; it will stand in need of a comment to make it intelligible. Not at all, answered *Sampson*; for it is so plain, that there is no difficulty in it: children thumb it, boys read it, men understand it, and old folks commend it; in short, it is so tossed about, so conned and so thoroughly known by all sorts of people, that they no sooner espy a lean scrub-horse than they cry, Yonder goes *Rozinante*. But none are so much addicted to reading it as your pages: there is not a nobleman's anti-chamber, in which you will not find a *Don Quixote*: if one lays it down, another takes it up: one asks for it, another snatches it: in short, this history is the most pleasing and least prejudicial entertainment hitherto published; for there is not so much as the appearance of an immodest word in it, nor a thought that is not entirely catholic. To write otherwise, said *Don Quixote*, had not been to write truths, but lyes; and historians, who are fond of venting falsehoods, should be burnt, like coiners of false money. For my part, I cannot imagine what moved
the

the author to introduce novels, or foreign relations, my own story affording matter enough: but without doubt we may apply the proverb, With hay or with straw ¹, &c. for verily had he confined himself to the publishing my thoughts, my sighs, my tears, my good wishes, and my achievements alone, he might have compiled a volume as big, or bigger than all the works of *Tostatus* ². In short, Signor batchelor, what I mean is, that, in order to the compiling histories, or books of any kind whatever, a man had need of a great deal of judgment, and a mature understanding: to talk wittily, and write pleasantly, are the talents of a great genius only. The most difficult character in comedy is that of the fool, and he must be no simpleton that plays that part. History is a sacred kind of writing, because truth is essential to it; and where truth is, there god himself is, so far as truth is concerned: notwithstanding which, there are those, who compose books, and toss them out into the world like fritters. There are few books so bad, said the batchelor, but there is something good in them. There is no doubt of that, replied *Don Quixote*; but it often happens, that they, who have deservedly acquired a good share of reputation by their writings, yet lessen or lose it entirely by committing them to the press. The reason of that, said *Sampson*, is, that printed works being examined at leisure, the faults thereof are the more easily discovered; and the greater the fame of the author is, the more strict and severe is the scrutiny. Men famous for their parts, great poets, and celebrated historians, are always envied by those, who take a pleasure, and make it their particular entertainment, to censure other mens writings, without ever having published any of their own. That is not to be wondered at, said *Don Quixote*; for there are many divines, who make no figure in the pulpit, und yet are excellent at espying the defects or superfluities of preachers.

¹ The proverb entire is, *De Paja o de b  no el jergon ll  no*, that is, *the bed or tick full of hay or straw*; so it be filled, no matter with what.

² A *Spaniard*, who wrote a great many volumes of divinity.

preachers. All this is very true, Signor *Don Quixote*, said *Carraasco*; but I wish such criticks would be more merciful, and less nice, and not dwell so much upon the moats of that bright sun, the work they censure. For, though *aliquando bonus dormitat Homerus*, they ought to consider how much he was awake, to give his work as much light, and leave as little shade, as he could: and perhaps those very parts, which some men do not taste, are like moles, which sometimes add to the beauty of the face that has them. And therefore I say, that whoever prints a book runs a very great risque, it being of all impossibilities the most impossible to write such an one, as shall satisfy and please all kinds of readers. That, which treats of me, said *Don Quixote*, has pleased but a few. On the contrary, replied the batchelor, as *stultorum infinitus est numerus*, so infinite is the number of those, who have been delighted with that history: though some have taxed the author's memory as faulty or treacherous, in forgetting to tell us who the thief was that stole *Sancho's Dapple*¹: which is not related, but only inferred from what is there written, that he was stolen; and in a very short time after we find him mounted upon the self-same beast, without hearing how *Dapple* appeared again. It is also objected, that he has omitted to mention what *Sancho* did with the hundred crowns he found in the port-manteau upon the fable mountain; for he never speaks of them more, and many persons would be glad to learn what he did with them, or how he spent them; for that is one of the most substantial points wanting in the work. *Sancho* answered: Master *Sampson*, I am not now in a condition of telling tales, or making up accounts; for I have a qualm come over my stomach, and shall be upon the rack², 'till I have removed it with a couple of draughts of stale. I have
it

1 Here is one remarkable instance of forgetfulness in criticizing another: for *Gines de Passamonte* is expressly mentioned as the thief, both when the ass was stolen, and when he was recovered.

2 Literally, *shall be stuck upon St. Lucia's thorn*, supposed to be a cant phrase for the rack; for which the *Royal Dictionary* produces no other voucher but this passage.

it at home, and my chuck stays for me. As soon as I have dined I will come back, and satisfy your worship, and the whole world, in whatever they are pleased to ask me, both concerning the loss of *Dapple*, and what became of the hundred crowns. So without waiting for an answer, or speaking a word more, he went away to his own house. *Don Quixote* pressed and entreated the batchelor to stay, and do penance with him. The batchelor accepted of the invitation, and staid: a couple of pigeons was added to the usual commons, and the conversation at table fell upon the subject of chivalry. *Carraasco* carried on the humour: the banquet was ended: they slept out the heat of the day: *Sancho* came back, and the former discourse was reassumed.

C H A P. IV.

Wherein Sancho Pança answers the batchelor Sampson Carraasco's doubts and questions, with other incidents worthy to be known and recited.

SANCHO came back to *Don Quixote's* house, and, reassuming the former discourse, in answer to what the batchelor *Sampson Carraasco* desired to be informed of, namely, by whom, when, and how the ass was stolen, he said: That very night, when, flying from the holy brotherhood, we entered into the fable mountain, after the unlucky adventure of the galley-slaves, and of the dead body that was carrying to *Segovia*, my master and I got into a thicket, where he leaning upon his launce, and I sitting upon *Dapple*, being both of us mauled and fatigued by our late skirmishes, we fell asleep as soundly as if we had had four feather-beds under us: especially I for my part slept so fast, that the thief, whoever he was, had leisure enough to suspend me on four stakes, which he planted under the four corners of the pannel, and in this manner leaving me mounted thereon, got *Dapple* from under me, without my feeling it. That is an easy matter, and no new accident, said *Don Quixote*:
for

for the like happened to *Sacripante* at the siege of *Albraca*, where that famous robber *Brunelo*, by this self-same invention, stole his horse from between his legs. The dawn appeared, continued *Sancho*, and scarce had I stretched myself, when, the stakes giving way, down came I with a confounded squelch to the ground. I looked about for my ass, but saw him not: the tears came into my eyes, and I made such a lamentation, that, if the author of our history has not set it down, he may make account he has omitted an excellent thing. At the end of I know not how many days, as I was accompanying the princess *Micomicona*, I saw and knew my ass again, and upon him came, in the garb of a gypsy, that cunning rogue, and notorious malefactor, *Gines de Passamonte*, whom my master and I freed from the galley-chain. The mistake does not lie in this, replied *Sampson*, but in the author's making *Sancho* still ride upon the very same beast, before he gives us any account of his being found again. To this, said *Sancho*, I know not what to answer, unless it be that the historian was deceived; or it might be an oversight of the printer. It must be so without doubt, quoth *Sampson*: but what became of the hundred crowns? were they sunk? I laid them out, quoth *Sancho*, for the use and behoof of my own person, and those of my wife and children; and they have been the cause of my wife's bearing patiently the journies and rambles I have taken in the service of my master *Don Quixote*: for had I returned, after so long a time, penniless, and without my ass, black would have been my luck. If you would know any thing more of me, here am I, ready to answer the king himself in person: and no body has any thing to meddle or make, whether I brought or brought not, whether I spent or spent not; for if the blows that have been given me in these sallies were to be paid for in ready-money, though rated only at four maravedis apiece, another hundred crowns would not pay for half of them: and let every man lay his hand upon his heart, and let him not be judging white for black, nor black for white; for every one is as god has made him, and oftentimes

oftentimes a great deal worse. I will take care, said *Carrasco*, to advertise the author of the history, that, if he reprints the book, he shall not forget what honest *Sancho* has told us, which will make the book as good again. Is there any thing else to be corrected in that legend, Signor batchelor? quoth *Don Quixote*. There may be others, answered *Carrasco*, but none of that importance with those already mentioned. And, peradventure, said *Don Quixote*, the author promises a second part. He does, answered *Sampson*, but says he has not met with it, nor can learn who has it; and therefore we are in doubt whether it will appear or no: and as well for this reason, as because some people say, that second parts are never good for any thing, and others, that there is enough of *Don Quixote* already, it is believed, there will be no second part; though some, who are more jovial than saturnine, cry, Let us have more *Quixotades*; let *Don Quixote* encounter, and *Sancho Pança* talk; and, be the rest what it will, we shall be contented. And pray, how stands the author affected? demanded *Don Quixote*. How? answered *Sampson*; why, as soon as ever he can find the history he is looking for with extraordinary diligence, he will immediately send it to the press, being prompted thereto more by interest than by any motive of praise whatever. To which *Sancho* said: Does the author aim at money and profit? it will be a wonder then if he succeeds, since he will only stitch it away in great haste, like a taylor on *Easter* eve; for works that are done hastily are never finished with that perfection they require. I wish this same Signor *Moor* would consider a little what he is about: for I and my master will furnish him so abundantly with lime and mortar in matter of adventures and variety of accidents, that he may not only compile a second part, but an hundred. The good man thinks, without doubt, that we lie sleeping here in straw; but let him hold up the foot while the smith is shoeing, and he will see on which we halt. What I can say is, that, if this master of mine had taken my counsel, we had ere now been in the field, redressing grievances, and
righting

righting wrongs, as is the practice and usage of good knights-errant.

Sancho had scarce finished this discourse, when the neighings of *Rozinante* reached their ears; which *Don Quixote* took for a most happy omen, and resolved to make another sally within three or four days; and declaring his intention to the batchelor, he asked his advice, which way he should begin his journey. The batchelor replied, he was of opinion that he should go directly to the kingdom of *Arragon*, and the city of *Saragossa*, where in a few days there was to be held a most solemn tournament, in honour of the festival of saint *George*, in which he might acquire renown above all the *Arragonian* knights, which would be the same thing as acquiring it above all the knights in the world. He commended his resolution as most honourable and most valorous, and gave him a hint to be more wary in encountering dangers, because his life was not his own, but theirs who stood in need of his aid and succour in their distresses. This is what I renounce, Signor *Sampson*, quoth *Sancho*; for my master makes no more of attacking an hundred armed men, than a greedy boy would do half a dozen watry melons. Body of the world! Signor batchelor, yes, there must be a time to attack, and a time to retreat; and it must not be always, *Saint Jago, and charge, Spain*¹. And farther I have heard say, and, if I remember right, from my master himself, that the mean of true valour lies between the extremes of cowardice and rashness: and if this be so, I would not have him run away when there is no need of it, nor would I have him fall on when the too great superiority requires quite another thing: but above all things I would let my master know, that, if he will carry me with him, it must be upon condition, that he shall battle it all himself, and that I will not be obliged to any other thing, but to look after his cloaths and his diet; to which purposes I will fetch and carry like any water-spaniel:

but

¹ *Santiago y cierra España*. It is the cry of the *Spaniards*, when they fall on.

but to imagine, that I will lay hand to my sword, though it be against rascally wood-cutters with hoods and hatchets, is to be very much mistaken. I, Signor *Sampson*, do not set up for the fame of being valiant, but for that of being the best and faithfullest squire that ever served a knight-errant: and if my lord *Don Quixote*, in consideration of my many and good services, has a mind to bestow on me some one island of the many his worship says he shall light upon, I shall be much beholden to him for the favour; and though he should not give me one, born I am, and we must not rely upon one another, but upon god: and perhaps the bread I shall eat without the government may go down more favourily than that I should eat with it: and how do I know but the devil, in one of these governments, may provide me some stumbling-block, that I may fall, and dash out my grinders. *Sancho* I was born, and *Sancho* I intend to die: yet for all that, if, fairly and squarely, without much solicitude or much danger, heaven should chance to throw an island, or some such thing, in my way, I am not such a fool neither as to refuse it; for it is a saying, When they give you a heifer, make haste with the rope: and when good-fortune comes, be sure take her in, and make her welcome.

Brother *Sancho*, quoth *Carraasco*, you have spoken like any professor: nevertheless trust in god, and Signor *Don Quixote*, that he will give you, not only an island, but even a kingdom. One as likely as the other, answered *Sancho*; though I could tell, Signor *Carraasco*, that my master will not throw the kingdom he gives me into a bag without a bottom: for I have felt my own pulse, and find myself in health enough to rule kingdoms and govern islands, and so much I have signified before now to my lord. Look you, *Sancho*, quoth *Sampson*, honours change manners; and it may come to pass, when you are a governor, that you may not know the very mother that bore you. That, answered *Sancho*, may be the case with those that are born among the mallows, but not with those,

whose

whose souls, like mine, are covered four inches thick with grease of the old christian: no, but consider my disposition, whether it is likely to be ungrateful to any body. God grant it, said *Don Quixote*, and we shall see when the government comes; for methinks I have it already in my eye.

This said, he desired the batchelor, if he were a poet, that he would do him the favour to compose for him some verses by way of a farewell to his lady *Dulcinea del Toboso*, and that he would place a letter of her name at the beginning of each verse, in such manner, that, at the end of the verses, the first letters taken together might make *Dulcinea del Toboso*. The batchelor answered, though he was not of the famous poets of *Spain*, who were said to be but three and a half¹, he would not fail to compose those verses; though he was sensible it would be no easy task, the name consisting of seventeen letters; for if he made four stanzas of four verses each, there would be a letter too much, and if he made them of five, which they call *Decima's* or *Redondilla's*, there would be three letters wanting: nevertheless he would endeavour to sink a letter as well as he could, so as that the name of *Dulcinea del Toboso* should be included in the four stanzas. Let it be so by all means, said *Don Quixote*; for if the name be not plain and manifest, no woman will believe the rhymes were made for her. They agreed upon this, and that they should set out eight days after. *Don Quixote* enjoined the batchelor to keep it secret, especially from the priest, and master *Nicholas*, and from his niece and house-keeper, that they might not obstruct his honourable and valorous purpose. All which *Carraasco* promised, and took his leave, charging *Don Quixote* to give him advice of his good or ill success, as opportunity offered: and so they again bid each other farewell, and *Sancho* went

¹ The first, *Alonzo de Ercilla*, author of the *Araucana*: the second, *Juan Rufo* of *Cordova*, author of the *Ausfrida*; and the third, *Christopher Verves* of *Valentia*, author of the *Montserate*. By the half poet *Don Gregorio* thinks *Cervantes* means himself.

98 *The LIFE and EXPLOITS of*
to provide and put in order what was necessary for the
expedition.

C H A P. V.

*Of the wise and pleasant discourse, which passed be-
tween Sancho Pança and his wife Teresa Pança.*

TH E translator of this history, coming to write this fifth chapter, says, he takes it to be apocryphal, because in it *Sancho* talks in another style than could be expected from his shallow understanding, and says such subtil things, that it is reckoned impossible that he should know them: nevertheless, he would not omit translating them, to comply with the duty of his office, and so went on, saying.

Sancho came home so gay and so merry, that his wife perceived his joy a bow-shot off, inasmuch that she could not but ask him: What is the matter, friend *Sancho*, you are so merry? To which he answered: Dear wife, if it were god's will, I should be very glad not to be so well pleased as I appear to be. Husband, replied she, I understand you not, and know not what you mean by saying, you should be glad, if it were god's will, you were not so much pleased: now, silly as I am, I cannot guess how one can take pleasure in not being pleased. Look you, *Teresa*, answered *Sancho*, I am thus merry, because I am resolved to return to the service of my master *Don Quixote*, who is determined to make a third sally in quest of adventures; and I am to accompany him, for so my necessity will have it: besides I am pleased with the hopes of finding the other hundred crowns, like those we have spent: though it grieves me, that I must part from you and my children; and if god would be pleased to give me bread, dryshod and at home, without dragging me over rough and smooth, and through thick and thin (which he might do at a small expence, and by only willing it so) it is plain, my joy would be more firm and solid, since it is now mingled with sorrow for leaving you: so that I said right, when I
said,

the

bi.

rite
po-
yle
ng,
oof-
he
the

his
that
end
ed:
glad
and,
what
were
filly
e in
San-
turn
de-
res;
will
ind-
have
from
ed to
agg-
hick
and
l be
for-
en I
said,





J. A. Vanderbank inv. & del.

T. Chambers sculp.

said, I should be glad, if it were god's will, I were not so well pleased. Look you, *Sancho*, replied *Teresa*, ever since you have been a member of a knight-errant, you talk in such a round-about manner, that there is no body understands you. It is enough, that god understands me, wife, answered *Sancho*; for he is the understander of all things; and so much for that: and do you hear, sister, it is convenient you should take more than ordinary care of *Dapple* these three days, that he may be in a condition to bear arms: double his allowance, and get the pack-saddle in order, and the rest of his tackling; for we are not going to a wedding, but to roam about the world, and to have now and then a bout at *give and take* with giants, fiery dragons and goblins, and to hear hissings, roarings, bellowings, and bleatings: all which would be but flowers of lavender, if we had not to do with *Yangueses* and enchanted *Moors*. I believe indeed, husband, replied *Teresa*, that your squires-errant do not eat their bread for nothing, and therefore I shall not fail to beseech our lord to deliver you speedily from so much evil hap. I tell you, wife, answered *Sancho*, that, did I not expect ere long to see myself a governor of an island, I should drop down dead upon the spot. Not so, my dear husband, quoth *Teresa*: Let the hen live, though it be with the pip. Live you, and the devil take all the governments in the world. Without a government came you from your mother's womb; without a government have you lived hitherto; and without a government will you go, or be carried, to your grave, whenever it shall please god. How many folks are there in the world that have not a government; and yet they live for all that, and are reckoned in the number of the people? The best sauce in the world is hunger, and, as that is never wanting to the poor, they always eat with a relish. But if, perchance, *Sancho*, you should get a government, do not forget me, and your children. Consider that little *Sancho* is just fifteen years old, and it is fit he should go to school, if so be his uncle the abbot means to breed him up to the church. Consider al-

so, that *Maria Sancha* your daughter will not break her heart if we marry her; for I am mistaken if she has not as much mind to a husband as you have to a government: and indeed, indeed, better a daughter but indifferently married, than well kept. In good faith, answered *Sancho*, if god be so good to me that I get any thing like a government, dear wife, I will match *Maria Sancha* so highly, that there will be no coming near her without calling her, *your ladyship*. Not so, *Sancho*, answered *Teresa*; the best way is to marry her to her equal: for if, instead of pattins, you put her on clogs, and, instead of her russet petticoat of fourteen penny stuff, you give her a farthingal and petticoats of silk, and, instead of plain *Molly* and *You*, she be called *my lady* such-a-one, and *your ladyship*, the girl will not know where she is, and will fall into a thousand mistakes at every step, discovering the coarse thread of her home-spun country-stuff. Peace, fool, quoth *Sancho*; for all the business is to practise two or three years, and after that the ladyship and the gravity will sit upon her as if they were made for her; and, if not, what matters it? Let her be a lady, and come what will of it. Measure yourself by your condition, *Sancho*, answered *Teresa*; seek not to raise yourself higher, and remember the proverb, Wipe your neighbour's son's nose, and take him into your house¹. It would be a pretty business truly to marry our *Maria* to some great count or knight, who, when the fancy takes him, would look upon her as some strange thing, and be calling her country-wench, clod-breaker's brat, and I know not what: not while I live, husband; I have not brought up my child to be so used: do you provide money, *Sancho*, and leave the matching of her to my care; for there is *Lope Tocho*, *John Tocho's* son, a lusty hale young man, whom we know, and I am sure he has a sneaking kindness for the girl: she will be very well married to him, considering he is our equal, and will always be under

our

¹ This is a literal version of the *Spanish* proverb, the meaning of which, I suppose, is, *match your daughter with your neighbour's son*.

our eye; and we shall be all as one, parents and children, grandsons and sons-in-law, and so the peace and blessing of god will be among us all; and do not you pretend to be marrying her now at your courts and great palaces, where they will neither understand her, nor she understand herself. Hark you, beast, and wife for *Barabbas*, replied *Sancho*, why would you now, without rhyme or reason, hinder me from marrying my daughter with one, who may bring me grand children that may be stiled *your lordships*? Look you, *Teresa*, I have always heard my betters say, He that will not when he may, when he will he shall have nay: and it would be very wrong, now that fortune is knocking at our door, to shut it against her: let us spread our sails to the favourable gale that now blows. This kind of language, and what *Sancho* says farther below, made the translator of this history say, he takes this chapter to be apocryphal.

Do you not think, animal, continued *Sancho*, that it would be well for me to be really possessed of some beneficial government, that may lift us out of the dirt, and enable me to match *Maria Sancha* to whom I pleased? You will then see how people will call you *Donna Teresa Pança*, and you will sit in the church with velvet cushions, carpets, and tapestries, in spite of the best gentlewomen of the parish. No! no! continue as you are, and be always the same thing, without being encreased or diminished, like a figure in the hangings. Let us have no more of this, pray; for little *Sancha* shall be a countess, in spite of your teeth. For all that, husband, answered *Teresa*, I am afraid this countess-ship will be my daughter's undoing. But, what you please: make her a dutchess or a princess; but I can tell you, it shall never be with my good-will or consent. I was always a lover of equality, and cannot abide to see folks taking state upon themselves. *Teresa* my parents named me at the font, a plain simple name, without the additions, laces, or garnitures of *Don's* or *Donna's*. My father's name was *Cascajo*; and I, by being your wife, am called *Teresa Pança*, though indeed by good right I should be called *Teresa*

Cascajo. But where the kings please, there go the laws. I am contented with this name, without the additional weight of a *Don*, to make it so heavy that I shall not be able to carry it ; and I would not have people, when they see me decked out like any little countess or governess, immediately say ; Look, how stately madam hog-feeder moves ! Yesterday she toiled at her distaff from morning to night, and went to mass with the tail of her petticoat over her head, instead of a veil ; and to-day forsooth she goes with her farthingal, her embroideries, and with an air, as if we did not know her. God keep me in my seven, or my five, senses, or as many as I have ; for I do not intend to expose myself after this manner. Go you, brother, to your governing and islanding, and puff yourself up as you please : as for my girl and I, by the life of my father, we will neither of us stir a step from our own town. For the proverb says :

*The wife that expects to have a good name,
Is always at home as if she were lame :
And the maid that is honest, her chiefest delight,
Is still to be doing from morning to night.*

Get you with your *Don Quixote* to your adventures, and leave us with our ill-fortunes ; god will better them for us, if we deserve it : and truly I cannot imagine who made him a *Don*, a title, which neither his father nor his grand-father ever had. Certainly, replied *Sancho*, you must have some familiar in that body of yours : heavens bless thee, woman ! what a parcel of things have you been stringing one upon another, without either head or tail ! What has *Cascajo*, the embroideries, or the proverbs to do with what I am saying ? Hark-you, fool and ignorant (for so I may call you, since you understand not what I say, and are flying from good-fortune) had I told you, that our daughter was to throw herself headlong from some high tower, or go strolling about the world, as did the *Infanta Donna Urraca*, you would be in the right not to come into my opinion : but if, in two turns
of

of a hand, and less than one twinkling of an eye, I can equip her with a *Don* and *Your ladyship*, and raise you from the straw, to sit under a canopy of state, and upon a sofa with more velvet cushions, than all the *Almohadas* ¹ of *Morocco* had *Moors* in their lineage, why will you not consent to, and desire what I do? Would you know why, husband? answered *Teresa*: it is because of the proverb, which says, He that covers thee discovers thee. All glance their eyes hastily over the poor man, and fix them upon the rich; and if that rich man was once poor, then there is work for your murmurers and backbiters, who swarm every where like bees. Look you, *Teresa*, answered *Sancho*, and listen to what I am going to say to you; perhaps you have never heard it in all the days of your life: and I do not now speak of my own head; for all that I intend to say are sentences of that good father, the preacher, who held forth to us last *Lent* in this village; who, if I remember right, said, that all the things present, which our eyes behold, do appear, and exist in our minds much better, and with greater force, than things past.—All these reasonings here of *Sancho* are another argument to persuade the translator that this chapter is apocryphal, as exceeding the capacity of *Sancho*, who went on saying.

From hence it proceeds, that, when we see any person finely dressed, and set off with rich apparel, and with a train of servants, we are, as it were, compelled to shew him respect, although the memory, in that instant, recalls to our thoughts some mean circumstances, under which we have seen him; which meanness, whether it be of poverty or descent, being already past, no longer exists, and there remains only what we see present before our eyes. And if this person, whom fortune has raised from the obscurity of his native meanness, proves well behaved, liberal, and courteous to every body, and does not set himself to vie with the ancient nobility, be assured, *Teresa*, that

E 4

no

¹ A sport on the word *Almohada*, which signifies a cushion, and was also the surname of a famous race of the *Arabs* in *Africk*.

no body will remember what he was, but will reverence what he is, excepting the envious, from whom no prosperous fortune is secure. I do not understand you, husband, replied *Teresa*: do what you think fit, and break not my brains any more with your speeches and flourishes. And if you are revolved to do as you say—*Resolved*, you should say, wife, quoth *Sancho*, and not *revolved*. Set not your self to dispute with me, answered *Teresa*; I speak as it pleases god, and meddle not with what does not concern me. I say, if you hold still in the same mind of being a governor, take your son *Sancho* with you, and henceforward train him up to your art of government; for it is fitting the sons should inherit and learn their father's calling. When I have a government, quoth *Sancho*, I will send for him by the post, and will send you money, which I shall not want; for there are always people enough to lend governors money, when they have it not: but then be sure to cloath the boy so, that he may look, not like what he is, but what he is to be. Send you money, quoth *Teresa*, and I will equip him as fine as a palm-branch¹. We are agreed then, quoth *Sancho*, that our daughter is to be a countess? The day that I see her a countess, answered *Teresa*, I shall reckon I am laying her in her grave: but I say again, you may do as you please; for we women are born to bear the clog of obedience to our husbands, be they never such blockheads: and then she began to weep as bitterly, as if she already saw *Sancho* dead and buried. *Sancho* comforted her, and promised, that, though he must make her a countess, he would see and put it off as long as possibly he could. Thus ended their dialogue, and *Sancho* went back to visit *Don Quixote*, and put things in order for their departure.

C H A P.

¹ In *Italy* and *Spain* they carry in procession, on *Palm-Sunday*, a Palm-branch, the leaves of which are platted and interwoven with great art and nicety.

CHAP. VI.

Of what passed between Don Quixote, his niece, and house keeper, and is one of the most important chapters of the whole history.

WHILE Sancho Pança, and his wife Teresa Cascajo, were holding the foregoing impertinent ¹ discourse, *Don Quixote's* niece and house keeper were not idle ; who, guessing by a thousand signs that their uncle and master would break loose the third time, and return to the exercise of his unlucky knight-errantry, endeavoured by all possible means to divert him from so foolish a design : but it was all preaching in the desert, and hammering on cold iron. However among many other various reasonings, which passed between them, the house-keeper said to him : Sir, if your worship will not tarry quietly at home, and leave this rambling over hills and dales like a disturbed ghost, in quest of those same adventures, which I call misadventures, I am resolved to complain aloud to god and the king, to put a stop to it. To which *Don Quixote* replied : Mistress house-keeper, what answer god will return to your complaints, I know not ; and what his majesty will answer, as little : I only know, that, if I were king, I would dispense with myself from answering that infinity of impertinent memorials, which are every day presented to him : for one of the greatest fatigues a king undergoes, is, the being obliged to hear and answer every body ; and therefore I should be loth my concerns should give him any trouble. To which the house-keeper replied : Pray, Sir, are there not knights in his majesty's court ? Yes, answered *Don Quixote*, there are many ; and it is fitting there should, for the ornament and grandeur of princes, and for the ostentation of the royal dignity. Would

E 5

it

¹ So it is in the original (*impertinente* :) but I suspect the irony is here broke by the transcriber or printer, and not by the author himself, and that it should be (*importante*) *important*, which carries on the grave ridicule of the history.

it not then be better, replied she, that your worship should be one of them, and quietly serve your king and lord at court? Look you, friend, answered *Don Quixote*, all knights cannot be courtiers, neither can, nor ought, all courtiers to be knights-errant: there must be of all sorts in the world; and though we are all knights, there is a great deal of difference between us; for the courtiers, without stirring out of their apartments, or over the threshold, walk ye over the whole globe, in a map, without a farthing expence, and without suffering heat or cold, hunger or thirst. But we, the true knights-errant, measure the whole earth with our own feet, exposed to sun and cold, to the air and the inclemencies of the sky, by night and by day, on foot and on horseback; nor do we know our enemies in picture only, but in their proper persons, and attack them at every turn, and upon every occasion; without standing upon trifles, or upon the laws of duelling, such as, whether our adversary bears a shorter or longer launce or sword, whether he carries about him any relicks, or wears any secret coat of mail, or whether the sun be duly divided or not; with other ceremonies of the same stamp, used in single combats between man and man, which you understand not, but I do. And you must know farther, that your true knight-errant, though he should espy ten Giants, whose heads not only touch, but over top the clouds, and though each of them stalk on two prodigious towers instead of legs, and has arms like the main masts of huge and mighty ships of war, and each eye like a great mill-wheel, and more fiery than the furnace of a glass-house, yet must he in no wise be affrighted, but, on the contrary, with a genteel air, and an undaunted heart, encounter, assail, and, if possible, overcome and rout them in an instant of time, tho' they should come armed with the shell of a certain fish, which, they say, is harder than adamant; and though, instead of swords, they should bring trenchant fabres of *Damascan* steel, or iron maces pointed also with steel, as I have seen more than once or twice. All this I have said, mistress house-keeper, to shew you the difference
between

between some knights and others ; and it were to be wished, that every prince knew how to esteem this second, or rather first, species of knights-errant, since, as we read in their histories, some among them have been the bulwark, not of one only, but of many kingdoms.

Ah ! dear uncle, said then the niece, be assured, that what your worship alledges of knights-errant, is all invention and lyes, and, if their histories must not be burnt, at least they deserve to wear each of them a *Sanbenito*¹, or some badge, whereby they may be known to be infamous, and destructive of good manners. By the god in whom I live, said *Don Quixote*, were you not my niece directly, as being my own sister's daughter, I would make such an example of you for the blasphemy you have uttered, that the whole world should ring of it. How ! is it possible, that a young baggage, who scarcely knows how to manage a dozen of bobbins, should presume to put in her oar, and censure the histories of knights-errant ? What would Sir *Amadis* have said, should he have heard of such a thing ? But, now I think of it, I am sure he would have forgiven you ; for he was the most humble and most virtuous knight of his time, and the greatest favourer of damsels. But some other might have heard you, from whom you might not have come off so well : for all are not courteous and good-natured ; some are lewd and uncivil. Neither are all they, who call themselves knights, really such at bottom : for some are of gold, others of alchymy ; and yet all appear to be knights, though all cannot abide the touchstone of truth. Mean fellows there are, who break their winds in straining to appear knights ; and topping knights there are, who, one would think, die with desire to be thought mean men. The former raise themselves by their ambition or by their virtues ; the latter debase themselves by their weakness or their vices :

¹ A coat of black canvass, painted over with flames and devils, worn by heretics, when going to be burnt, by order of the inquisition.

vices : and one had need of a good discernment to distinguish between these two kinds of cavaliers, so near in their names, and so distant in their actions. Bless me ! uncle, quoth the niece, that your worship should be so knowing, that, if need were, you might mount a pulpit, and hold forth any where in the streets ¹, and yet should give into so blind a vagary, and so exploded a piece of folly, as to think to persuade the world, that you are valiant, now you are old ; that you are strong, when, alas ! you are infirm ; and that you are able to make crooked things straight, though stooping yourself under the weight of years ; above all, that you are a knight, when you are really none : for, though gentlemen may be such, yet poor ones hardly can. You are much in the right, niece, in what you say, answer'd *Don Quixote*, and I could tell you such things concerning lineages as would surprize you : but, because I would not mix things divine with human, I forbear. Hear me, friends, with attention. All the genealogies in the world may be reduced to four sorts, which are these. First, of those, who, having had low beginnings, have gone on extending and dilating themselves till they have arrived at a prodigious grandeur. Secondly, of those, who, having had great beginnings, have preserved, and continue to preserve them in the same condition they were in at first. Thirdly, of those, who, though they have had great beginnings, have ended in a small point like a pyramid, having gone on diminishing and decreasing continually, till they have come almost to nothing ; like the point of the pyramid, which, in respect of its base or pedestal, is next to nothing. Lastly, of those (and they are the most numerous) who, having had neither a good beginning, nor a tolerable middle, will therefore end without a name, like the families of common and ordinary people. Of the first sort, who, having had a mean beginning, have rose to greatness, and still preserve it, we have an example in the *Ottoman* family, which, from a poor shepherd its founder,

¹ The zealots now and then, and the young jesuits frequently, in *Italy* and *Spain*, get upon a bulk, and hold forth in the streets,

founder, is arrived at the height we now see it at. Of the second sort of genealogies, which began great, and preserve themselves without augmentation, examples may be fetched from sundry hereditary princes, who contain themselves peaceably within the limits of their own dominions, without enlarging or contracting them. Of those, who began great, and have ended in a point, there are thousands of instances: for all the *Pharaohs*, and *Ptolemies* of *Egypt*, the *Cæsars* of *Rome*, with all the herd (if I may so call them) of that infinite number of princes, monarchs, and lords, *Medes*, *Assyrians*, *Persians*, *Greeks*, and *Barbarians*; all these families and dominions, as well as their founders, have ended in a point and next to nothing: for it is impossible now to find any of their descendants, and, if one should find them, it would be in some low and abject condition. Of the lineages of the common sort I have nothing to say, only that they serve to swell the number of the living, without deserving any other fame or elogy. From all that has been said I would have you infer, my dear fools, that the confusion there is among genealogies is very great, and that those only appear great and illustrious, which shew themselves such by the virtue, riches, and liberality of their possessors. I say, virtue, riches and liberality, because the great man that is vicious will be greatly vicious, and the rich man, who is not liberal, is but a covetous beggar: for the possessor of riches is not happy in having, but in spending, them, and not in spending them merely according to his own inclination, but in knowing how to spend them properly. The knight, who is poor, has no other way of shewing himself to be one, but that of virtue, by being affable, well-behaved, courteous, kind, and obliging, not proud, not arrogant, no murmurer, and above all charitable; for, by two farthings given cheerfully to the poor, he shall discover as much generosity, as he who bestows large alms by sound of bell: and there is no one, who sees him adorned with the afore-said virtues, though he knows him not, but will judge and repute him to be well descended. Indeed it
would

would be a miracle, were it otherwise : praise was always the reward of virtue, and the virtuous cannot fail of being commended. There are two roads, daughters, by which men may arrive at riches and honours ; the one by the way of letters, the other by that of arms. I have more in me of the soldier than of the scholar, and was born, as appears by my propensity to arms, under the influence of the planet *Mars* ; so that I am, as it were, forced into that track ; and that road I must take in spite of the whole world : and it will be in vain for you to tire yourselves in persuading me not to attempt what heaven requires, fortune ordains, and reason demands, and, above all, what my inclination leads me to. I know the innumerable toils attending on knight-errantry. I know also the numberless advantages obtained thereby. I know, that the path of virtue is strait and narrow, and the road of vice broad and spacious. I know also that their ends and resting places are different : for those of vice, large and open, end in death ; and those of virtue, narrow and intricate, end in life, and not in life that has an end, but in that which is eternal. And I know, as our great *Castilian* poet expresses it, that

*Thro' these rough paths, to gain a glorious name,
We climb the steep ascent that leads to fame.
They miss the road, who quit the rugged way,
And in the smoother tracks of pleasure stray.*

Ah, woe is me ! quoth the niece ; what ! my uncle a poet too ! he knows every thing ; nothing comes amiss to him. I will lay a wager, that, if he had a mind to turn mason, he would build a house with as much ease as a bird-cage. I assure you, niece, answered *Don Quixote*, that if these knightly thoughts did not employ all my senses, there is nothing I could not do, nor any curious art, but what I could turn my hand to, especially bird-cages and tooth picks ¹.

By

¹ Tooth-picks in *Spain* are made of long shavings of boards, split and reduced to a straw's breadth, and wound up like small wax-lights.

By this time there was knocking at the door, and upon asking, who is there? *Sancho Pança* answered, it is I. The house-keeper no sooner knew his voice, but she ran to hide herself, so much she abhorred the sight of him. The niece let him in, and his master *Don Quixote* went out and received him with open arms; and they two, being locked up together in the knight's chamber, held another dialogue, not a jot inferior to the former.

C H A P. VII.

Of what passed between Don Quixote and his squire, with other most famous occurrences.

THE house-keeper no sooner saw that *Sancho* and her master had locked themselves up together, but she presently began to suspect the drift of their conference; and imagining that it would end in a resolution for a third sally, she took her veil, and, full of anxiety and trouble, went in quest of the batchelor *Samson Carrasco*, thinking that, as he was a well-spoken person, and a new acquaintance of her master's, he might be able to dissuade him from so extravagant a purpose. She found him walking to and fro in the court-yard of his house, and, as soon as she espied him, she fell down at his feet in violent disorder and a cold sweat. When *Carrasco* beheld her with signs of so much sorrow and heart-beating, he said: What is the matter, mistress house-keeper? what has befallen you, that you look as if your heart was at your mouth? nothing at all, dear master *Samson*, quoth she, only that my master is most certainly breaking forth. How breaking forth, madam? demanded *Samson*; has he broken a hole in any part of his body? No, quoth she, he is only breaking forth at the door of his own madness: I mean, Signor batchelor of my soul, that he has a mind to sally out again (and this will be his third time) to ramble about the world in quest of
what

what he calls adventures ¹, though, for my part, I cannot tell why he calls them so. The first time, he was brought home to us athwart an ass, and mashed to mummy. The second time, he came home in an ox-waggon, locked up in a cage, in which he persuaded himself he was enchanted, and the poor soul was so changed, that he could not be known by the mother that bore him, feeble, wan, his eyes sunk to the inmost lodgings of his brain, insomuch that I spent above six hundred eggs in getting him a little up again, as god and the world is my witness, and my hens that will not let me lye. I can easily believe that, answered the batchelor; for they are so good, so plump, and so well-nurtured, that they will not say one thing for another, though they should burst for it. In short then, mistress house-keeper, there is nothing more, nor any other disaster, only what is feared Signor *Don Quixote* may peradventure have a mind to do? No, Sir, answered she. Be in no pain then, replied the batchelor, but go home in god's name, and get me something warm for breakfast, and, by the way, as you go, repeat the prayer of saint *Apollonia*, if you know it; and I will be with you instantly, and you shall see wonders. Dear me! replied the house-keeper, the prayer of saint *Apollonia*, say you? that might do something, if my master's distemper lay in his gums; but alas! it lies in his brain. I know what I say, mistress house-keeper: get you home, and do not stand disputing with me; for you know I am a *Salamanca* batchelor of arts, and there is no batchelorizing ² beyond that. With that away went the house-keeper, and the batchelor immediately went to find the priest, and consult with him about what you will hear of in due time.

While *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* continued locked up together, there past some discourse between them, which the history relates at large with great punctuality and truth.

¹ *Venturas*. A play upon the word *ventura*, which signifies both *good luck* and also adventures.

² A word made on purpose, answerable to the original *bacchilear*.

truth. Quoth *Sancho* to his master ; Sir, I have now reluced my wife to consent to let me go with your worship wherever you please to carry me. *Reduced* you should say, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, and not *reluced*¹. Once or twice already, answered *Sancho*, if I remember right, I have besought your worship not to mend my words, if you understand my meaning ; and when you do not, say, *Sancho*, or devil, I understand you not ; and if I do not explain myself, then you may correct me ; for I am so focible — I do not understand you, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote* presently ; for I know not the meaning of, so focible. So focible, answered *Sancho*, means, I am so much so. I understand you less now, replied *Don Quixote*. Why, if you do not understand me, answered *Sancho*, I know not how to express it ; I know no more, god help me. O ! now I have it, answered *Don Quixote* : you mean you are so docible, so pliant, and so tractable, that you will readily comprehend whatever I shall say to you, and will learn whatever I shall teach you. I will lay a wager, quoth *Sancho*, you took me from the beginning, and understood me perfectly ; only you had a mind to put me out, to hear me make two hundred blunders more. That may be, replied *Don Quixote* : but, in short, what says *Teresa* ? *Teresa*, quoth *Sancho*, says, that fast bind fast find, and that we must have less talking, and more doing ; for he who shuffles is not he who cuts, and one performance is worth two promises : and say I, there is but little in woman's advice, yet he that won't take it is not over wise. I say so too, replied *Don Quixote* : proceed, *Sancho*, for you talk admirably to-day. The case is, replied *Sancho*, that, as your worship very well knows, we are all mortal, here to day, and gone to-morrow, that the lamb goes to the spit as soon as the sheep, and that no body can promise himself in this world more hours of life than god pleases to give him : for death is deaf, and, when he knocks at life's door, is always in haste ; and nothing can stay him, neither
force,

¹ But just now *Sancho* corrected his wife for saying *revolved* instead of *resolved*. See chap. V.

force, nor entreaties, nor scepters, nor mitres, according to publick voice and report, and according to what is told us from our pulpits. All this is true, said *Don Quixote*: but I do not perceive what you would be at. What I would be at, quoth *Sancho*, is, that your worship would be pleased to appoint me a certain salary, at so much *per* month, for the time I shall serve you, and that the said salary be paid me out of your estate; for I have no mind to stand to the courtesy of recompences, which come late, or lame, or never, god help me with my own. In short, I would know what I am to get, be it little or much: for the hen sits if it be but upon one egg, and many littles make a mickle, and while one is getting something, one is losing nothing. In good truth, should it fall out (which I neither believe nor expect) that your worship should give me that same island you have promised me, I am not so ungrateful, nor am I for making so hard a bargain, as not to consent, that the amount of the rent of such island be appraised, and my salary be deducted, cantity for cantity. Is not *quantity* as good as *cantity*, friend *Sancho*? answered *Don Quixote*. I understand you, quoth *Sancho*; I will lay a wager, I should have said *quanity*, and not *cantity*: but that signifies nothing, since your worship knew my meaning. Yes, and so perfectly too, returned *Don Quixote*, that I see to the very bottom of your thoughts, and the mark you drive at with the innumerable arrows of your proverbs. Look you, *Sancho*, I could easily appoint you wages, had I ever met with any precedent, among the histories of knights errant, to discover or shew me the least glimmering of what they used to get monthly or yearly. I have read all, or most of those histories, and do not remember ever to have read, that any knight-errant allowed his squire set wages. I only know, that they all served upon courtesy, and that, when they least thought of it, if their masters had good luck, they were rewarded with an island, or something equivalent, or at least remained with a title and some dignity. If, *Sancho*, upon the strength of these expectations, you are willing to re-

turn

turn to my service, in god's name do so : but to think, that I will force the ancient usage of knight-errantry off the hinges, is a very great mistake. And therefore, *Sancho*, be gone home, and tell your wife my intention, and if she is willing, and you have a mind to stay with me upon courtesy, *benè quidem* ; if not, we are as we were : for if the dove-house wants not bait, it will never want pigeons : and take notice, son, that a good reversion is better than a bad possession, and a good demand than bad pay. I talk thus, *Sancho*, to let you see, that I can let fly a volley of proverbs as well as you. To be short with you, if you are not disposed to go along with me upon courtesy, and run the same fortune with me, the lord have thee in his keeping, and make thee a saint, I pray god ; for I can never want squires, who will be more obedient, more diligent, and neither so selfish nor so talkative as you are.

When *Sancho* heard his master's fixed resolution, the sky clouded over with him, and the wings of his heart downright flagged ; for 'till now he verily believed his master would not go without him for the world's worth. While he stood thus thoughtful, and in suspense, came in *Sampson Carrasco*, and the niece and the house-keeper, who had a mind to hear what arguments he made use of to dissuade their master and uncle from going again in quest of adventures. *Sampson*, who was a notable wag, drew near, and embracing *Don Quixote*, as he did the time before, he exalted his voice, and said : O flower of knight-errantry ! O resplendent light of arms ! O mirror and honour of the *Spanish* nation ! may it please almighty god of his infinite goodness, that the person, or persons, who shall obstruct, or disappoint your third sally, may never find the way out of the labyrinth of their desires, nor ever accomplish what they so ardently wish. And turning to the house-keeper, he said : Now, mistress house-keeper, you may save yourself the trouble of saying the prayer of *St. Apollonia* ; for I know that it is the precise determination of the stars, that Signor *Don Quixote* shall once more put in execution his glorious and uncommon designs, and I should greatly burthen

burthen my conscience, did I not give intimation thereof, and persuade this knight no longer to detain and withhold the force of his valorous arm, and the goodness of his most undaunted courage, lest, by his delay, he defraud the world of the redress of injuries, the protection of orphans, the maintaining the honour of damsels, the relief of widows, and the support of married women, with other matters of this nature, which concern, depend upon, appertain, and are annexed to, the order of knight-errantry. Go on then, dear Signor *Don Quixote*, beautiful and brave; and let your worship and grandeur lose no time, but set forward rather to-day than to-morrow; and if any thing be wanting towards putting your design in execution, here am I, ready to supply it with my life and fortune; and if your magnificence stands in need of a squire, I shall think it a singular piece of good fortune to serve you as such. *Don Quixote* thereupon, turning to *Sancho*, said: Did I not tell you, *Sancho*, that I should have squires enough and to spare? behold, who is it that offers himself to be one, but the unheard-of batchelor *Sampson Carrasco*, the perpetual darling and delight of the *Salamancan* schools, sound and active of body, no prater, patient of heat and cold, of hunger and thirst, with all the qualifications necessary to the squire of a knight-errant? but heaven forbid, that, to gratify my own private inclination, I should endanger this pillar of literature, this urn of sciences, and lop off so eminent a branch of the noble and liberal arts. Let our new *Sampson* abide in his country, and, in doing it honour, at the same time reverence the grey hairs of his ancient parents; for I will make shift with any squire whatever, since *Sancho* deigns not to go along with me. I do deign, quoth *Sancho*, melted into tenderness, and his eyes overflowing with tears, and proceeded: It shall never be said of me, dear master, the bread is eaten, and the company broke up. I am not come of an ungrateful stock; since all the world knows, especially our village, who the *Panças* were, from whom I am descended: besides, I know, and am very well assured by many good works,

works, and more good words, the desire your worship has to do me a kindness; and if I have taken upon me so much more than I ought, by intermeddling in the article of wages, it was out of complaisance to my wife, who, when once she takes in hand to persuade a thing, no mallet drives and forces the hoops of a tub, as she does to make one do what she has a mind to: but, in short, a man must be a man, and a woman a woman; and since I am a man every where else (I cannot deny that) I will also be one in my own house, vex whom it will: and therefore there is no more to be done, but that your worship give order about your will, and its codicil, in such manner, that it cannot be rebuked, and let us set out immediately, that the soul of Signor *Sampson* may not suffer, who says he is obliged in conscience to persuade your worship to make a third sally; and I again offer myself to serve your worship, faithfully and loyally, as well, and better than all the squires that ever served knight-errant, in past or present times.

The batchelor stood in admiration to hear *Sancho Pança's* stile and manner of talking; for though he had read the first part of his master's history, he never believed he was so ridiculous as he is therein described: but hearing him now talk of will and codicil that could not be *rebuked*, instead of *revoked*, he believed all he had read of him, and concluded him to be one of the most solemn coxcombs of the age, and said to himself, that two such fools, as master and man, were never before seen in the world. In fine, *Don Quixote* and *Sancho*, being perfectly reconciled, embraced each other, and, with the approbation and good-liking of the grand *Carraasco*, now their oracle, it was decreed, their departure should be within three days, in which time they might have leisure to provide what was necessary for the expedition, especially a compleat helmet, which *Don Quixote* said he must by all means carry with him. *Sampson* offered him one, belonging to a friend of his, who, he was sure, would not deny it him, though, to say the truth, the brightness of the steel was not a little obscured by the tarnish and rust.

The

The curses, which the house-keeper and niece heaped upon the batchelor, were not to be numbered: they tore their hair, and scratched their faces, and, like the funeral-mourners formerly in fashion, lamented the approaching departure, as if it were the death, of their master. The design *Sampson* had in persuading him to sally forth again, was, to do what the history tells us hereafter, all by the advice of the priest and the barber, with whom he had plotted before-hand.

In short, in those three days, *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* furnished themselves with what they thought convenient, and, *Sancho* having appeased his wife, and *Don Quixote* his niece and house-keeper, in the dusk of the evening, unobserved by any body but the batchelor, who would needs bear them company half a league from the village, they took the road to *Toboso*; *Don Quixote* upon his good *Rozinante*, and *Sancho* upon his old *Dapple*, his wallets stored with provisions, and his purse with money, which *Don Quixote* had given him against whatever might happen. *Sampson* embraced him, praying him to give him advice of his good or ill fortune, that he might rejoice or condole with him, as the laws of their mutual friendship required. *Don Quixote* promised he would: *Sampson* returned to the village, and the knight and squire took their way toward the great city of *Toboso*.

C H A P. VIII.

Wherein is related what befel Don Quixote, as he was going to visit his Lady Dulcinea del Toboso.

PRAISED be the mighty *Ala!* says *Hamet Ben-engeli*, at the beginning of this eighth chapter: praised be *Ala!* repeating it thrice, and saying, he gives these praises, to find that *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* had again taken the field, and that the readers of their delightful history may make account, that, from this moment, the exploits and witty sayings of *Don Quixote* and his squire begin. He persuades them to forget the
former

former chivalries of the ingenious gentleman, and fix their eyes upon his future atchievements, which begin now upon the road to *Toboso*, as the former began in the fields of *Montiel*; and this is no very unreasonable request, considering what great things he promises, and thus he goes on, saying: *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* remained by themselves, and scarcely was *Sampson* parted from them, when *Rozinante* began to neigh, and *Dapple* to sigh; which was held by both knight and squire for a good sign, and a most happy omen, though, if the truth were to be told, the sighs and brayings of the ass exceeded the neighings of the steed; from whence *Sancho* gathered, that his good luck was to surpass and get above that of his master. But whether he drew this inference from judicial astrology, I cannot say, it not being known whether he was versed in it, since the history says nothing of it: only he had been heard to say, when he stumbled or fell, that he would have been glad he had not gone out of doors; for by a stumble or a fall nothing was to be got but a torn shoe, or a broken rib; and, though he was a simpleton, he was not much out of the way in this.

Don Quixote said to him: Friend *Sancho*, the night is coming on apace, and with too much darkness for us to reach *Toboso* by day-light; whither I am resolved to go, before I undertake any other adventure: there will I receive the blessing, and the good leave, of the peerless *Dulcinea*, with which leave I am well assured of finishing, and giving a happy conclusion to, every perilous adventure; for nothing in this world inspires knights-errant with so much valour, as the finding themselves favoured by their mistresses. I believe it, answered *Sancho*; but I am of opinion, it will be difficult for your worship to come to the speech of her, or be alone with her, at least in any place where you may receive her benediction, unless she tosses it over the pales of the yard; from whence I saw her, the time before, when I carried her the letter, with the news of the follies and extravagancies your worship was playing in the heart of the fable mountain. Pales did you fancy them to be, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*,
over

over which you saw that paragon of gentility and beauty? impossible! you must mean galleries, arcades, or cloysters of some rich and royal palace. All that may be, answered *Sancho*; but to me they seemed no better, or I have a very shallow memory. However let us go thither, *Sancho*, replied *Don Quixote*; for so I do but see her, be it through pales, through windows, through crannies, or through the rails of a garden, this I shall gain by it, that, how small soever a ray of the sun of her beauty reaches my eyes, it will so enlighten my understanding, and fortify my heart, that I shall remain without a rival either in wisdom or valour. In truth, Sir, answered *Sancho*, when I saw this sun of the lady *Dulcinea del Toboso*, it was not so bright as to send forth any rays; and the reason must be, that, as her ladyship was winnowing that wheat I told you of, the great quantity of dust that flew out of it overcast her face like a cloud, and obscured it. What! *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, do you persist in saying and believing, that my lady *Dulcinea* was winnowing wheat; a business and employment quite foreign to persons of distinction, who are designed and reserved for other exercises and amusements, which distinguish their high quality a bow-shot off? you forget, *Sancho*, our poet's verses, in which he describes the labours of those four nymphs, in their chrystal mansions, when they raised their heads above the delightful *Tagus*, and seated themselves in the green meadow, to work those rich stuffs, which, as the ingenious poet there describes them, were all embroidered with gold, silk, and pearls. And in this manner must my lady have been employed, when you saw her: but the envy, some wicked enchanter bears me, changes and converts into different shapes every thing that should give me pleasure; and therefore, in that history, said to be published, of my exploits, if peradventure its author was some sage my enemy, he has, I fear, put one thing for another, with one truth mixing a thousand lyes, and amusing himself with relating actions foreign to what is requisite for the continuation of a true history.

O envy!

O envy! thou root of infinite evils, and canker-worm of virtues! All other vices, *Sancho*, carry somewhat of pleasure along with them: but envy is attended with nothing but distaste, rancour, and rage. That is what I say too, replied *Sancho*; and I take it for granted, in that same legend or history of us, the bachelor *Carraasco* tells us he has seen, my reputation is tossed about like a tennis ball. Now, as I am an honest man, I never spoke ill of any enchanter, nor have I wealth enough to be envied. It is true, indeed, I am said to be somewhat sly, and to have a little spice of the knave; but the grand cloak of my simplicity, always natural and never artificial, hides and covers all. And if I had nothing else to boast of, but the believing, as I do always, firmly and truly in god, and in all that the holy catholick *Roman* church holds and believes, and the being, as I really am, a mortal enemy to the *Jews*, the historians ought to have mercy upon me, and treat me well in their writings. But let them say what they will: naked was I born, and naked I am: I neither lose nor win; and, so my name be but in print, and go about the world from hand to hand, I care not a fig, let people say of me whatever they list. That, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, is just like what happened to a famous poet of our times, who having wrote an ill-natured satire upon the court-ladies, a certain lady, who was not expressly named in it, so that it was doubtful whether she was implied in it or not, complained to the poet, asking him what he had seen in her, that he had not inserted her among the rest, telling him he must enlarge his satire, and put her in the supplement, or woe be to him. The poet did as he was bid, and set her down for such a one as governesses will not name. As for the lady, she was satisfied to find herself infamously famous. Of the same kind is the story they tell of that shepherd, who set fire to, and burnt down, the famous temple of *Diana*, reckoned one of the seven wonders of the world, only that his name might live in future ages: and though it was ordered by publick edict, that no body should name or mention him either

by word or writing, that he might not attain to the end he proposed, yet still it is known he was called *Erostratus*. To the same purpose may be alledged what happened to the great emperor *Charles* the fifth with a *Roman* knight. The emperor had a mind to see the famous church of the *Rotunda*, which by the ancients was called the *Pantheon*, or temple of all the gods, and now, by a better name, *The church of all saints*, and is one of the most entire edifices remaining of heathen *Rome*, and which most preserves the fame of the greatness and magnificence of its founders. It is made in the shape of a half-orange, very spacious, and very lightsome, though it has but one window, or rather a round opening at top: from whence the emperor having surveyed the inside of the structure, a *Roman* knight, who stood by his side, shewing him the beauty and ingenious contrivance of that vast machine and memorable piece of architecture, when they were come down from the sky-light, said to the emperor: sacred sir, a thousand times it came into my head to clasp your majesty in my arms, and cast myself down with you from the top to the bottom of the church, merely to leave an eternal name behind me. I thank you, answered the emperor, for not putting so wicked a thought in execution, and henceforward I will never give you an opportunity of making the like proof of your loyalty, and therefore command you never to speak to me more, or come into my presence; and after these words he bestowed some great favour upon him. What I mean, *Sancho*, is, that the desire of fame is a very active principle in us. What, think you, cast *Horatius* down from the bridge, armed at all points, into the depth of the *Tyber*? What burnt the arm and hand of *Mutius*? What impelled *Curtius* to throw himself into the flaming gulph, that opened itself in the midst of *Rome*? What made *Cæsar* pass the *Rubicon* in opposition to all presages? And, in more modern examples, what bored the ships and stranded those valiant *Spaniards*, conducted by the most courteous *Cortez* in the new world? All these, and other great and very different exploits, are, were, and shall

shall be, the works of fame, which mortals desire as the reward and earnest of that immortality their noble deeds deserve: though we christian and catholic knights-errant ought to be more intent upon the glory of the world to come, which is eternal in the ethereal and celestial regions, than upon the vanity of fame, acquired in this present and transitory world; for, let it last never so long, it must end with the world itself, which has its appointed period. Therefore, O *Sancho*, let not our works exceed the bounds prescribed by the christian religion, which we profess. In killing giants we are to destroy pride: we must overcome envy by generosity and good-nature, anger by sedateness and composure of mind, gluttony and sleep by eating little and watching much, lust and lasciviousness by the fidelity we maintain to those we have made mistresses of our thoughts, laziness by going about all parts of the world, and seeking occasions, which may make us, besides being christians, renowned knights. These, *Sancho*, are the means of obtaining those extremes of praise, which a good name brings along with it.

All that your worship has hitherto told me, quoth *Sancho*, I very well understand: but, for all that, I wish you would be so kind as to dissolve me one doubt, which is this moment come into my mind. *Resolve*, you would say, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*: out with it in god's name; for I will answer as far as I know. Pray, tell me, Sir, proceeded *Sancho*; those *July's* and *August's*, and all those feat-doing knights you spoke of, that are dead, where are they now? The gentiles, answered *Don Quixote*, are doubtless in hell: the christians, if they were good christians, are either in purgatory, or in heaven. Very well, quoth *Sancho*; but let us know now, whether the sepulchres, in which the bodies of those great lords lie interred, have silver lamps burning before them, and whether the walls of their chapels are adorned with crutches, winding sheets, old perukes, legs, and eyes¹; and,

F 2

if

¹ The chapels of saints, in *Roman* catholic countries, where miracles are pretended to be wrought, are thus furnished.

if not with these, pray, with what are they adorned? To which *Don Quixote* answered. The sepulchres of the heathens were for the most part sumptuous temples. The ashes of *Julius Cæsar* were deposited in an urn, placed on the top of a pyramid of stone, of a prodigious bigness, which is now called the *obelisk of St. Peter*. The sepulchre of the emperor *Adrian* was a castle as big as a good village, called *Moles Adriani*, and now the castle of *St. Angelo* in *Rome*. Queen *Artemisia* buried her husband *Mausolus* in a tomb, reckoned one of the seven wonders of the world. But none of these sepulchres, nor many others of the gentiles, were hung about with winding-sheets, or other offerings, or signs to denote those to be saints, who were buried in them. That is what I am coming to, replied *Sancho*; and now, pray tell me; which is the more difficult, to raise a dead man to life, or to slay a giant? The answer is very obvious, answered *Don Quixote*; to raise a dead man. There I have caught you, quoth *Sancho*. His fame then, who raises the dead, gives sight to the blind, makes the lame walk, and cures the sick; before whose sepulchre lamps are continually burning, and whose chapels are crouded with devotees, adoring his relicks upon their knees; his fame, I say, shall be greater both in this world and the next, than that, which all the heathen emperors and knights-errant in the world ever had, or ever shall have. I grant it, answered *Don Quixote*. Then, replied *Sancho*, the bodies and relicks of saints have this fame, these graces, these prerogatives, or how do you call them, with the approbation and licence of our holy mother church, and also their lamps, winding-sheets, crutches, pictures, perukes, eyes, and legs, whereby they encrease people's devotion, and spread their own christian fame. Besides, kings themselves carry the bodies or relicks of saints upon their shoulders, kiss bits of their bones, and adorn and enrich their chapels and most favourite altars with them. What would you have me infer, *Sancho*, from all you have been saying? quoth *Don Quixote*. I would infer, said *Sancho*, that we had better turn saints immediately, and we shall

shall then soon attain to that renown we aim at. And pray take notice, Sir, that yesterday, or t'other day (for it is so little a while ago that I may so speak) a couple of poor bare-footed friars ¹ were beatified or canonized, whose iron chains, wherewith they girded and disciplined themselves, people now reckon it a great happiness to touch or kiss; and they are now held in greater veneration than *Orlando's* sword in the armory of our lord the king, god bless him. So that, master of mine, it is better being a poor friar of the meanest order, than the valiantest knight errant whatever; for a couple of dozen of penitential lashes are more esteemed in the sight of god, than two thousand tilts with a lance, whether it be against giants, goblins, or dragons. I confess, answered *Don Quixote*, all this is just as you say: but we cannot be all friars; and many and various are the ways, by which god conducts his elect to heaven. Chivalry is a kind of religious profession; and some knights are now saints in glory. True, answered *Sancho*; but I have heard say, there are more friars in heaven, than knights-errant. It may well be so, replied *Don Quixote*, because the number of the religious is much greater than that of the knights-errant ². And yet, quoth *Sancho*, there are abundance of the errant-fort. Abundance, indeed, answered *Don Quixote*; but few, who deserve the name of knights.

In these and the like discourses they passed that night, and the following day, without any accident worth relating; whereat *Don Quixote* was not a little grieved. In short, next day they descried the great city of *Toboso*; at sight whereof *Don Quixote's* spirits were much elevated, and *Sancho's* as much dejected,

F 3

because

¹ *Diego de Alcala* was one of them, and has one of the richest, most adorned, and most frequented churches in *Spain*.

² Here *Cervantes* has made a large amends for the several strokes of satire upon the clergy occasionally scattered up and down this work.—The master and man are in a very devout vein, and give the preference to the whipping-friar before the slashing knight-errant.

because he did not know *Dulcinea's* house, and had never seen her in his life, no more than his master had; so that they were both equally in pain, the one to see her, and the other for not having seen her: and *Sancho* knew not what to do, when his master should send him to *Toboso*. In fine, *Don Quixote* resolved to enter the city about night-fall; and, 'till that hour came, they staid among some oak-trees near the town; and the time appointed being come, they went into the city, where things betel them that were things indeed.

C H A P. IX.

Which relates what will be found in it.

HALF the night, or thereabouts, was spent, when *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* left the mountain, and entered into *Toboso*. The town was all hushed in silence: for its inhabitants were found asleep, reposing, as the phrase is, with out-stretched legs. The night was not quite a dark one; though *Sancho* could have wished it were, that the obscurity thereof might cover or excuse his prevarication. Nothing was heard in all the place but the barking of dogs, stunning *Don Quixote's* ears, and disquieting *Sancho's* heart. Now and then an ass brayed, swine grunted, and cats mewed: which different sounds were augmented by the silence of the night. All which the enamoured knight took for an ill omen; nevertheless he said to *Sancho*: *Sancho*, son, lead on before to *Dulcinea's* palace; for it may be we shall find her awake. To what palace? body of the sun! answered *Sancho*: That I saw her highness in was but a very little house. She must have been retired at that time, replied *Don Quixote*, to some small apartment of her castle, amusing herself with her damsels, as is usual with great ladies and princesses. Since your worship, quoth *Sancho*, will needs have my lady *Dulcinea's* house to be a castle, is this an hour to find the gates open?

open ? and is it fit we should stand thundering at the door, 'till they open and let us in, putting the whole house in an uproar ? Think you, we are going to a bawdy-house, like your galants, who knock, and call, and are let in at what hour they please, be it never so late ? First, to make one thing sure, let us find this castle, replied *Don Quixote*, and then I will tell you what is fit to be done : and look, *Sancho* ; for either my eyes deceive me, or that great, dark, bulk we see yonder must be *Dulcinea's* palace. Then lead on yourself, Sir, answered *Sancho* : perhaps it may be so ; though, if I were to see it with my eyes, and touch it with my hands, I will believe it just as much as I believe it is now day. *Don Quixote* led the way, and, having gone about two hundred paces, he came up to the bulk, which cast the dark shade, and perceived it was a large steeple, and presently knew, that the building was no palace, but the principal church of the place : whereupon he said ; we are come to the church, *Sancho*. I find we are, answered *Sancho*, and pray god we are not come to our graves : for it is no very good sign, to be rambling about church-yards at such hours, and especially since I have already told your worship, if I remember right, that this same lady's house stands in an alley, where there is no thorough fare. God's curse light on thee, thou block-head ! said *Don Quixote* : where have you found, that castles and royal palaces are built in alleys without a thorough fare ? Sir, replied *Sancho*, each country has its customs : perhaps it is the fashion here in *Toboso* to build your palaces and great edifices in alleys ; and therefore I beseech your worship to let me look about among these lanes or alleys just before me ; and it may be in one nook or other I may pop upon this same palace, which I wish I may see devoured by dogs, for confounding and bewildering us at this rate. Speak with respect, *Sancho*, of my lady's matters, quoth *Don Quixote* : let us keep our holydays in peace, and not throw the rope after the bucket. I will curb myself, answered *Sancho* : but with what patience can I bear to think, that your worship will needs have me know

our mistress's house, and find it at midnight, having seen it but once, when you cannot find it yourself, though you must have seen it thousands of times? You will put me past all patience, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*: come hither, heretic; have I not told you a thousand times, that I never saw the peerless *Dulcinea* in all the days of my life, nor ever stepped over the threshold of her palace, and that I am enamoured only by hear-say, and by the great fame of her wit and beauty? I hear it now, answered *Sancho*, and I say, that, since your worship has never seen her, no more have I. That cannot be, replied *Don Quixote*: for at least you told me some time ago, that you saw her winnowing wheat, when you brought me the answer to the letter I sent by you. Do not insist upon that, Sir, answered *Sancho*; for, let me tell you, the sight of her, and the answer I brought, were both by hear-say too; and I can no more tell who the lady *Dulcinea* is, than I am able to box the moon. *Sancho*, *Sancho*, answered *Don Quixote*, there is a time to jest, and a time when jests are unseasonable. What! because I say that I never saw nor spoke to the mistress of my soul, must you therefore say so too, when you know the contrary so well?

While they two were thus discoursing, they perceived one passing by with a couple of mules, and by the noise a plow-share made in dragging along the ground, they judged it must be some husbandman, who had got up before day, and was going to his work; and so in truth it was. The plowman came singing the ballad of the defeat of the *French* in *Roncesvalles*¹. *Don Quixote*, hearing it, said: Let me die, *Sancho*, if we shall have any good luck to-night: do you not hear what this peasant is singing? Yes, I do, answered *Sancho*: but what is the defeat at *Roncesvalles* to our purpose? he might as well have sung the ballad of *Calainos*; for it had been all one as to the good or ill success of our business. By this time the country-fellow was come up to them, and *Don Quixote* said to him:

¹ A doleful ditty, like our *Chevy Chase*. It began, *Mala la k'vivistes Franceses en essa Roncesvalles*, &c.

him : Good-morrow, honest friend ; can you inform me, whereabouts stands the palace of the peerless princess *Donna Dulcinea del Toboso* ? Sir, answered the young fellow, I am a stranger, and have been but a few days in this town, and serve a rich farmer in tilling his ground : in yon house over the way live the parish priest and the sexton of the place : both, or either of them, can give your worship an account of this same lady-princess ; for they keep a register of all the inhabitants of *Toboso* : though I am of opinion no princess at all lives in this town, but several great ladies, that might every one be a princess in her own house. One of these then, quoth *Don Quixote*, must be she I am enquiring after. Not unlikely, answered the plowman, and god speed you well ; for the dawn begins to appear : and, pricking on his mules, he staid for no more questions. *Sancho*, seeing his master in suspense, and sufficiently dissatisfied, said to him : Sir, the day comes on apace, and it will not be adviseable to let the sun overtake us in the street : it will be better to retire out of the city, and that your worship shelter yourself in some grove hereabouts, and I will return by daylight, and leave no nook or corner in all the town unsearched for this house, castle, or palace of my lady's ; and I shall have ill luck if I do not find it : and as soon as I have found it, I will speak to her ladyship, and will tell her, where, and how your worship is waiting for her orders and direction for you to see her without prejudice to her honour or reputation. *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, you have uttered a thousand sentences in the compass of few words : the counsel you give I relish much, and accept of most heartily : come along, son, and let us seek where we may take covert : afterwards, as you say, you shall return, to seek, see, and speak to my lady, from whose discretion and courtesy I expect more than miraculous favours. *Sancho* stood upon thorns 'till he got his master out of town, lest he should detect the lye of the answer he carried him to the fable mountain, pretending it came from *Dulcinea* : and therefore he made haste to be gone, which they did instantly ; and about two miles from the place,

they found a grove or wood, in which *Don Quixote* took shelter, while *Sancho* returned back to the city to speak to *Dulcinea*; in which embassy there befel him things, which require fresh attention and fresh credit.

C H A P. X.

Wherein is related the cunning used by Sancho in enchanting the lady Dulcinea, with other events as ridiculous as true.

THE author of this grand history, coming to relate what is contained in this chapter, says, he had a mind to have passed it over in silence, fearing not to be believed, because herein *Don Quixote's* madness exceeds all bounds, and rises to the utmost pitch, even two bow shots beyond the greatest extravagance: however, notwithstanding this fear and diffidence, he has set every thing down in the manner they were transacted, without adding to, or diminishing a tittle from, the truth of the story, and not regarding the objections that might be made against his veracity: and he had reason; for truth may be stretched, but cannot be broken, and always gets above falsehood, as oil does above water: and so, pursuing his story, he says.

As soon as *Don Quixote* had sheltered himself in the grove, oak-wood, or forest, near the great *Toboso*, he sent *Sancho* back to the town, commanding him not to return into his presence, 'till he had first spoken to his lady, beseeching her that she would be pleased to give her captive knight leave to wait upon her, and that she would deign to give him her blessing, that from thence he might hope from the most prosperous success in all his encounters and difficult enterprizes. *Sancho* undertook to fulfil his command, and to bring him as good an answer now, as he had done the time before. Go then, son, replied *Don Quixote*, and be not in confusion when you stand before the blaze of that sun of beauty you are going to seek. Happy thou above

bove all the squires in the world ! Bear in mind, and be sure do not forget, how she receives you ; whether she changes colour while you are delivering your embassy ; whether you perceive in her any uneasiness or disturbance at hearing my name ; whether her cushion cannot hold her, if perchance you find her seated on the rich *Estrado*¹ of her dignity ; and, if she be standing, mark, whether she stands sometimes upon one foot and sometimes upon the other ; whether she repeats the answer she gives you three or four times ; whether she changes it from soft to harsh, from sharp to amorous ; whether she lifts her hand to adjust her hair, though it be not disordered : lastly, son, observe all her actions and motions : for, by your relating them to me just as they were, I shall be able to give a shrewd guess at what she keeps concealed in the secret recesses of her heart, touching the affair of my love. For you must know, *Sancho*, if you do not know it already, that, among lovers, the external actions and gestures, when their loves are the subject, are most certain couriers, and bring infallible tidings of what passes in the inmost recesses of the soul. Go, friend, and better fortune than mine be your guide ; and may better success, than what I fear and expect in this bitter solitude, send you back safe. I will go, and return quickly, quoth *Sancho* : in the mean time, good Sir, enlarge that little heart of yours, which at present can be no bigger than a hazel-nut, and consider the common saying, that a good heart breaks bad luck ; and, where there is no bacon, there are no pins to hang it on ; and, where we least think it, there starts the hare : this I say, because, though we could not find the castles or palaces of my lady *Dulcinea* this last night, now that it is day-light, I reckon to meet with them when I least think of it ; and, when I have found them, let me alone to deal with her. Verily, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, you have the knack of applying your proverbs so to the subject we are upon, that I pray god send me better luck in obtaining my wishes !

Upon

¹ The floor raised at the upper-end of the rooms of state in Spain, where the ladies sit upon cushions to receive visits.

Upon this *Sancho* turned his back, and switched his *Dapple*, leaving *Don Quixote* on horse-back, resting on his stirrups, and leaning upon his lance, full of sad and confused imaginations : where we will leave him, and go along with *Sancho Pança*, who departed from his master no less confused and thoughtful than he ; insomuch that he was scarcely got out of the grove, when, turning about his head, and finding that *Don Quixote* was not in sight, he lighted from his beast, and, setting himself down at the foot of a tree, he began to talk to himself, and say : Tell me now, brother *Sancho*, whither is your worship going ? are you going to seek some ass that is lost ? no, verily. Then what are you going to seek ? why, I go to look for a thing of nothing, a princess, and in her the sun of beauty, and all heaven together. Well, *Sancho*, and where think you to find all this ? where ? in the grand city of *Toboso*. Very well ; and pray, who sent you on this errand ? why, the renowned knight *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, who redresses wrongs, and gives drink to the hungry, and meat to the thirsty. All this is very well : and do you know her house, *Sancho* ? my master says, it must be some royal palace, or stately castle. And have you ever seen her ? neither I, nor my master, have ever seen her. And do you think it would be right or adviseable, that the people of *Toboso* should know, you come with a design to inveigle away their princesses, and lead their ladies astray ? what if they should come, and grind your ribs with pure dry basting, and not leave you a whole bone in your skin ? truly, they would be much in the right of it, unless they please to consider, that I am commanded, and, being but a messenger, am not in fault. Trust not to that, *Sancho* ; for the *Manchegans* are as cholerick as honourable, and so ticklish no body must touch them. God's my life ! if they smoak us, woe be to us. But why go I looking for three legs in a cat, for another man's pleasure ? Besides, to look for *Dulcinea* up and down *Toboso*, is as if one should look for little *Mary* in *Rabena*, or a batchelor in *Salamanca*. The devil, the devil, and no body else, has put me upon this business. This soliloquy *Sancho* held with himself, and the

the upshot was, to return to it again, saying to himself : Well ; there is remedy for every thing but death, under whose dominion we must all pass, in spite of our teeth, at the end of our lives. This master of mine, by a thousand tokens that I have seen, is mad enough to be tied in his bed ; and in truth, I come very little behind him : nay, I am madder than he, to follow him, and serve him, if there be any truth in the proverb that says : Shew me thy company, and I will tell thee what thou art ; or in that other ; Not with whom thou wert bred, but with whom thou art fed. He then being a mad-man, as he really is, and so mad, as frequently to mistake one thing for another, taking black for white, and white for black ; (as appeared plainly, when he said, the wind-mills were giants, and the monks mules dromedaries, and the flocks of sheep armies of enemies, and many more matters to the same tune ;) it will not be very difficult to make him believe, that a country wench (the first I light upon) is the lady *Dulcinea* ; and, should he not believe it, I will swear to it ; and if he swears, I will out-swear him ; and if he persists, I will persist more than he, in such manner, that mine shall still be uppermost, come what will of it. Perhaps by this positiveness I shall put an end to his sending me again upon such errands, seeing what preposterous answers I bring him ; or, perhaps, he will think, as I imagine he will, that some wicked enchanter, of those he says bear him a spite, has changed her form to do him mischief and harm.

This project set *Sancho's* spirit at rest, and he reckoned his business as good as half done ; and so staying where he was till toward evening, that *Don Quixote* might have room to think he had spent so much time in going to, and returning from, *Toboso*, every thing fell out so luckily for him, that, when he got up to mount his *Dapple*, he espied three country-wenches, coming from *Toboso* toward the place where he was, upon three young asses, but, whether male or female, the author declares not, though it is more probable they were she-asses, that being the ordinary mounting of country-women : but as it is a matter of no great consequence,

consequence, we need not give ourselves any trouble to decide it.

In short, as soon as *Sancho* espied the lasses, he rode back at a round rate to seek his master *Don Quixote*, whom he found breathing a thousand sighs, and amorous lamentations. As soon as *Don Quixote* saw him, he said: Well, friend *Sancho*, am I to mark this day with a white or a black stone? Your worship, answered *Sancho*, had better mark it with red oaker, as they do the inscriptions on professors chairs, to be the more easily read by the lookers on. By this, quoth *Don Quixote*, you should bring good news. So good, answered *Sancho*, that your worship has no more to do, but to clap spurs to *Rozinante*, and get out upon the plain, to see the lady *Dulcinea del Tobiso*, who, with a couple of her damsels, is coming to make your worship a visit. Holy god! what is it you say, friend *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*? take care you do not impose upon my real sorrow by a counterfeit joy. What should I get, answered *Sancho*, by deceiving your worship, and being detected the next moment? Come, Sir, put on, and you will see the princess, our mistress, arrayed and adorned, in short, like herself. She and her damsels are one blaze of flaming gold; all strings of pearls, all diamonds, all rubies, all cloth of tissue above ten hands deep: their tresses loose about their shoulders are so many sun-beams playing with the wind; and, what is more, they come mounted upon three pye-bellied belfreys, the finest one can lay eyes on. Palfreys, you would say, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*. There is no great difference, I think, answered *Sancho*, between belfreys and palfreys: but let them be mounted how they will, they are sure the finest creatures one would wish to see, especially my mistress the princess *Dulcinea*, who ravishes one's senses. Let us go, son *Sancho*, answered *Don Quixote*; and as a reward for this news, as unexpected as good, I bequeath you the choicest spoils I shall gain in my next adventure; and, if that will not satisfy you, I bequeath you the colts my three mares will foal this year upon our town common. I stick to the colts,

answered

answered *Sancho*; for it is not very certain, that the spoils of your next adventure will be worth much.

By this time they were got out of the wood, and espied the three wenches very near. *Don Quixote* darted his longing eyes over all the road toward *Toboso*, and, seeing no body but the three wenches, he was much troubled, and asked *Sancho*, whether they were come out of the city when he left them? Out of the city! answered *Sancho*: are your worship's eyes in the nape of your neck, that you do not see it is they who are coming, shining like the sun at noon-day? I see only three country-girls, answered *Don Quixote*, on three asses. Now, god keep me from the devil! answered *Sancho*; is it possible, that three palfreys, or how do you call them, white as the driven snow, should appear to you to be asses? As the lord liveth, you shall pluck off this beard of mine, if that be so. I tell you, friend *Sancho*, answered *Don Quixote*, that it is as certain they are he or she-asses, as that I am *Don Quixote*, and you *Sancho Pança*; at least such they seem to me. Sir, quoth *Sancho*, say not such a word, but snuff those eyes of yours, and come and make your reverence to the mistress of your thoughts, who is just at hand. And so saying he advanced a little forward to meet the country-wenches, and, alighting from *Dapple*, he laid hold of one of their asses by the halter, and bending both knees to the ground, he said: Queen, princess, and dutchess of beauty, let your haughtiness and greatness be pleased to receive into your grace and good-liking your captive knight, who stands yonder turned into stone, in total disorder, and without any pulse, to find himself before your magnificent presence. I am *Sancho Pança* his squire, and he is that forlorn knight *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, otherwise called the knight of the sorrowful figure. *Don Quixote* had now placed himself on his knees close by *Sancho*, and, with staring and disturbed eyes, looked wistfully at her, whom *Sancho* called queen, and lady; and as he saw nothing in her but a plain country-girl, and homely enough (for she was round-visaged and flat-nosed) he was confounded and

and amazed, without daring to open his lips. The wenches too were astonished to see their companion stopped by two men, of such different aspects, and both on their knees. But she, who was stopped, broke silence, and in an angry tone said: get out of the road, and be hanged, and let us pass by, for we are in haste. To which *Sancho* made answer: O princess, and universal lady of *Toboso*, does not your magnificent heart relent to see, kneeling before your sublimated presence, the pillar and prop of knight-errantry? Which one of the other two hearing, said, (checking her beast that was turning out of the way ¹) Look ye, how these small gentry come to make a jest of us poor country-girls, as if we did not know how to give them as good as they bring: get ye gone your way, and let us go ours, and so speed you well. Rise, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, hearing this; for I now perceive, that fortune, not yet satisfied with afflicting me, has barred all the avenues whereby any relief might come to this wretched soul I bear about me in the flesh. And thou, O extreme of all that is valuable, utmost limit of all human gracefulness, sole remedy of this disconsolate heart that adores thee, though now some wicked enchanter persecutes me, spreading clouds and cataracts over my eyes, and has to them, and them only, changed and transformed thy peerless beauty and countenance into that of a poor country-wench; if he has not converted mine also into that of some goblin, to render it abominable in your eyes, afford me one kind and amorous look, and let this submissive posture, and these bended knees, before your disguised beauty, tell you the humility wherewith my soul adores you. Marry come up, quoth the wench, with your idle gibberish! get you gone, and let us go, and we shall be obliged to you. *Sancho* moved off, and let her go, highly delighted that he was come off so well with his contrivance.

¹ The original makes her say, *stand still, while I curry thy hide, my father-in-law's ass*; which we are told, in the dictionaries, is a proverbial expression used by the peasants when they beat their wives, and is here supposed to be addressed by the country-wench to the ass upon which she rode.

contrivance. The imaginary *Dulcinea* was scarcely at liberty, when, pricking her beast with a goad she had in a stick, she began to scour along the field; and the ass, feeling the smart more than usual, fell a kicking and wincing in such a manner, that down came the lady *Dulcinea* to the ground. *Don Quixote*, seeing this, ran to help her up, and *Sancho* to adjust the pannel that was got under the ass's belly. The pannel being righted, and *Don Quixote* desirous to raise his enchanted mistress in his arms, and set her upon her palfrey, the lady, getting up from the ground, saved him that trouble; for, retiring three or four steps back, she took a little run, and, clapping both hands upon the ass's crupper, jumped into the saddle lighter than a falcon, and seated herself astride like a man. Whereupon *Sancho* said: By saint *Roque*, madam our mistress is lighter than a hawk, and able to teach the most expert *Cordovan* or *Mexican* how to mount à la *gineta*: she springs into the saddle at a jump, and, without the help of spurs, makes her palfrey run like a wild ass; and her damsels are as good at it as she; they all fly like the wind: and so it really was; for *Dulcinea* being re-mounted, they all made after her, and set a running, without looking behind them, for above half a league. *Don Quixote* followed them, as far as he could, with his eyes, and, when they were out of sight, turning to *Sancho*, he said: *Sancho*, what think you? how am I persecuted by enchanters! and take notice how far their malice, and the grudge they bear me, extends, even to the depriving me of the pleasure I should have had in seeing my mistress in her own proper form. Surely I was born to be an example to the unhappy, and the butt and mark at which all the arrows of ill fortune are aimed and levelled. And you must also observe, *Sancho*, that these traitors were not contented with barely changing and transforming my *Dulcinea*, but they must transform and metamorphose her into the mean and deformed resemblance of that country-wench; at the same time robbing her of that, which is peculiar to

great

great ladies, the fragrant scent occasioned by being always among flowers and perfumes: for I must tell you, *Sancho*, that, when I approached to help *Dulcinea* upon her palfrey (as you call it, though to me it appeared to be nothing but an ass) she gave me such a whiff of undigested garlick, as almost knocked me down, and poisoned my very soul. O scoundrels! cried *Sancho* at this juncture, O barbarous and evil-minded enchanters! O! that I might see ye all strung and hung up by the gills like sardines! a smoaking! Much ye know, much ye can, and much more ye do. It might, one would think, have sufficed ye, rogues as ye are, to have changed the pearls of my lady's eyes into cork-galls, and her hair of the purest gold into bristles of a red cow's tail, and lastly all her features from beautiful to deformed, without meddling with her breath, by which we might have guessed at what was hid beneath that coarse disguise: though, to say the truth, to me she did not appear in the least deformed, but rather all beauty, and that increased too by a mole she had on her right lip, like a whisker, with seven or eight red hairs on it, like threads of gold, and above a span long. As to that mole, said *Don Quixote*, according to the correspondence there is between the moles of the face and those of the body, *Dulcinea* should have another on the brawn of her thigh, on the same side with that on her face: but hairs of the length you mention are somewhat of the longest for moles. Yet I can assure your worship, answered *Sancho*, that there they were, and looked as if they had been born with her. I believe it, friend, replied *Don Quixote*; for nature has placed nothing about *Dulcinea* but what is finished and perfect: and therefore, had she an hundred moles, like those you speak of, in her they would not be moles, but moons and resplendent stars. But, tell me, *Sancho*, that which to me appeared to be a pannel, and which you adjusted, was it a side-saddle, or a pillion? It was
a side-

1 A small fish in those seas, which they dry as the Dutch do herrings.

a fide-saddle, answered *Sancho*, with a field-covering, worth half a kingdom for the richness of it. And why could not I see all this, *Sancho*? quoth *Don Quixote*. Well, I say it again, and will repeat it a thousand times, that I am the most unfortunate of men. The sly rogue *Sancho* had much ado to forbear laughing, to hear the fooleries of his master, who was so delicately gulled. In fine, after many other discourses passed between them, they mounted their beasts again, and followed the road to *Saragossa*, which they intended to reach in time to be present at a solemn festival wont to be held every year in that noble city. But, before their arrival, there befel them things, which, for their number, greatness and novelty, deserve to be written and read, as will be seen.

C H A P. XI.

Of the strange adventure, which befel the valorous Don Quixote with the wain or cart of the parliament of death.

DON QUIXOTE went on his way exceeding pensive, to think what a base trick the enchanters had played him, in transforming his lady *Dulcinea* into the homely figure of a country-wench: nor could he devise what course to take to restore her to her former state. And these meditations so distracted him, that, without perceiving it, he let drop the bridle on *Roxinante's* neck; who, finding the liberty that was given him, at every step turned aside to take a mouthful of the fresh grass, with which those fields abounded. *Sancho* brought him back out of his maze by saying to him; Sir, sorrow was made, not for beasts, but men: but, if men give too much way to it, they become beasts: rouze, Sir, recollect yourself, and gather up *Roxinante's* reins; cheer up, awake, and exert that lively courage so befitting a knight-errant. What the devil is the matter? What dejection is this? Are we here, or in *France*? Satan take all the *Dulcinea's* in the world, since the welfare of a single

single knight-errant is of more worth than all the enchantments and transformations of the earth. Peace, *Sancho*, answered *Don Quixote*, with no very faint voice; peace, I say, and do not utter blasphemies against that enchanted lady, whose disgrace and misfortune are owing to me alone, since they proceed entirely from the envy the wicked bear to me. I say so too, answered *Sancho*: Who saw her then and sees her now, his heart must melt with grief, I vow. Well may you say so, *Sancho*, replied *Don Quixote*, you, who saw her in the full lustre of her beauty; for the enchantment extended not to disturb your sight, nor to conceal her perfections from you: against me alone, and against my eyes, was the force of its poison directed. Nevertheless I have hit upon one thing, *Sancho*, which is, that you did not give me a true description of her beauty: for, if I remember right, you said her eyes were of pearl; now eyes that look like pearl are fitter for a seabream than a lady. I rather think *Dulcinea's* eyes must be of verdant emeralds arched over with two celestial bows, that serve for eye-brows. Take therefore those pearls from her eyes, and apply them to her teeth: for doubtless, *Sancho*, you mistook eyes for teeth. It may be so, answered *Sancho*; for her beauty confounded me, as much as her deformity did your worship. But let us recommend all to god, who alone knows what shall befall in this vale of tears, this evil world we have here, in which there is scarce any thing to be found without some mixture of iniquity, imposture, or knavery. One thing, dear Sir, troubles me more than all the rest; which is, to think, what means must be used, when your worship shall overcome some giant, or some other knight-errant, and send him to present himself before the beauty of the lady *Dulcinea*. Where shall this poor giant, or the miserable vanquished knight, be able to find her? Methinks I see them fauntering up and down *Toboso*, and looking about for my lady *Dulcinea*; and though they should meet her in the middle of the street, they will no more know her, than they would my father.

Per-

Perhaps, *Sancho*, answered *Don Quixote*, the enchantment may not extend so far as to conceal *Dulcinea* from the knowledge of the vanquished knights or giants, who shall present themselves before her; and we will make the experiment upon one or two of the first I overcome, and send them with orders to return and give me an account of what happens with respect to this business. I say, Sir, replied *Sancho*, that I mightily approve of what your worship has said: for by this trial we shall come to the knowledge of what we desire; and if she is concealed from your worship alone, the misfortune will be more yours than hers: but, so the lady *Dulcinea* have health and contentment, we, for our parts, will make a shift, and bear it as well as we can, pursuing our adventures, and leaving it to time to do his work, who is the best physician for these, and other greater, maladies.

Don Quixote would have answered *Sancho*, but was prevented by a cart's crossing the road before him, loaden with the strangest and most different figures and personages imaginable. He, who guided the mules, and served for a carter, was a frightful dæmon. The cart was uncovered, and open to the sky, without awning or wicker-sides. The first figure, that presented itself to *Don Quixote's* eyes, was that of death itself with a human visage. Close by him sat an angel, with large painted wings. On one side stood an emperor, with a crown, seemingly of gold, on his head. At death's feet sat the god called *Cupid*, not blind-folded, but with his bow, quiver, and arrows. There was also a knight compleatly armed, excepting only that he had no morrion, nor casque, but a hat with a large plume of feathers of divers colours. With these came other persons differing both in habits and countenances. All which appearing of a sudden did in some sort startle *Don Quixote*, and frightened *Sancho* to the heart. But *Don Quixote* presently rejoiced at it, believing it to be some new and perilous adventure: and with this thought, and a courage prepared to encounter any danger whatever, he planted himself just before the cart, and, with a loud menacing voice, said:
Carter,

Carter, coachman, or devil, or whatever you are, delay not to tell me who you are, whither you are going, and who are the persons you are carrying in that coach-waggon, which looks more like *Charon's* ferry-boat, than any cart now in fashion. To which the devil, stopping the cart, calmly replied: Sir, we are strollers belonging to *Angulo el Malo's* company: this morning, which is the octave of *Corpus Christi*, we have been performing, in a village on the other side of yon hill, a piece representing the *Cortes* or *Parliament of death*; and this evening we are to play it again in that village just before us; which being so near, to save ourselves the trouble of dressing and undressing, we come in the cloaths we are to act our parts in. That lad there acts death; that other an angel; yonder woman, our author's wife, a queen; that other a foldier; he an emperor, and I a devil: and I am one of the principal personages of the drama; for in this company I have all the chief parts. If your worship would know any more of us, ask me, and I will answer you most punctually; for, being a devil, I know every thing. Upon the faith of a knight-errant, answered *Don Quixote*, when I first espied this cart, I imagined some grand adventure offered itself; and I say now, that it is absolutely necessary, if one would be undeceived, to lay one's hand upon appearances. God be with you, good people: go, and act your play, and, if there be any thing in which I may be of service to you, command me; for I will do it readily, and with a good will, having been, from my youth, a great admirer of masques and theatrical representations.

While they were thus engaged in discourse, fortune so ordered it, that there came up one of the company, in an antick dress, hung round with abundance of bells, and carrying at the end of a stick three blown ox bladders. This masque, approaching *Don Quixote*, began to fence with the stick, and to beat the bladders against the ground, jumping, and tinkling all his bells: which horrid apparition so startled Ro-

zinante,

zínante, that, taking the bit between his teeth, *Don Quixote* not being able to hold him in, he fell a running about the field a greater pace than the bones of his anatomy ever seemed to promise. *Sancho*, considering the danger his master was in of getting a fall, leaped from *Dapple*, and ran to help him: but by that time he was come up to him, he was already upon the ground, and close by him *Rozinante*, who fell together with his master, the ordinary end and upshot of *Rozinante's* frolics and adventurings. But scarce had *Sancho* quitted his beast, to assist *Don Quixote*, when the bladder-dancing devil jumped upon *Dapple*, and thumping him with the bladders, fear and the noise, more than the smart, made him fly through the field toward the village, where they were going to act. *Sancho* beheld *Dapple's* career, and his master's fall, and did not know which of the two necessities he should apply to first: but, in short, like a good squire and good servant, the love he bore his master prevailed over his affection for his ass; though, every time he saw the bladders hoisted in the air, and fall upon the buttocks of his *Dapple*, they were to him so many tortures and terrors of death, and he could have wished those blows had fallen on the apple of his own eyes, rather than on the least hair of his ass's tail. In this perplexity and tribulation he came up to *Don Quixote*, who was in a much worse plight than he could have wished, and helping him to get upon *Rozinante*, he said to him: Sir, the devil has run away with *Dapple*. What devil? demanded *Don Quixote*. He with the bladders, answered *Sancho*. I will recover him, replied *Don Quixote*, though he should hide him in the deepest and darkest dungeons of hell. Follow me, *Sancho*; for the cart can march but slowly, and the mules shall make satisfaction for the loss of *Dapple*. There is no need, answered *Sancho*, to make such haste: moderate your anger, Sir; for the devil, I think, has already abandoned *Dapple*, and is gone his way. And so it was; for the devil, having fallen with *Dapple*, in imitation of *Don Quixote* and *Rozinante*, trudged on foot toward the town, and the ass turned back to his master. Nevertheless,

thelefs, faid *Don Quixote*, it will not be amifs to chaftife the unmannerlinefs of this devil at the expence of fome of his company, though it were the emperor himfelf. Good your worfhip, quoth *Sancho*, never think of it, but take my advice, which is, never to meddle with players; for they are a people mightily beloved. I have feen a player taken up for two murders, and get off fcot-free. Your worfhip muft know, that, as they are merry folks, and give pleafure, all people favour them; every body protects, affifts, and esteems them, and efpecially if they are of his majefty's company of comedians, or that of fome grandee, all or moft of whom, in their manner and garb, look like any princes. For all that, answered *Don Quixote*, that farcical devil fhall not efcape me, nor have caufe to brag, though all human kind favoured him. And fo faying, he rode after the cart, which was by this time got very near the town, and calling aloud he faid: Hold, ftop a little, merry Sirs, and let me teach you how to treat affes and cattle, which ferve to mount the fquires of knights-errant. *Don Quixote's* cries were fo loud, that the players heard him, and, judging of his defign by his words, in an instant out jumped death, and after him the emperor, the carter-devil, and the angel; nor did the queen, or the god *Cupid*, ftay behind; and all of them, taking up ftones, ranged themfelves in battle-array, waiting to receive *Don Quixote* at the points of their pebbles. *Don Quixote* feeing them pofted in fuch order, and fo formidable a battalion, with arms up-lifted, ready to difcharge a ponderous volley of ftones, checked *Rozinante* with the bridle, and fet himfelf to confider how he might attack them with leaft danger to his perfon. While he delayed, *Sancho* came up, and, feeing him in a pofture of attacking that well-formed brigade, he faid to him: It is mere madnefs, Sir, to attempt fuch an enterprife: pray, confider, dear Sir, there is no fencing againft a flail, nor defensive armour againft ftones and brick-bats, unlefs it be thrufting one's felf into a bell of brafs. Confider alfo, that it is rather rafhnefs than courage, for one man alone to encounter an army,

my, where death is present, and where emperors fight in person, and are assisted by good and bad angels. But if this consideration does not prevail with you to be quiet, be assured, that, among all those, who stand there, though they appear to be princes, kings, and emperors, there is not one knight-errant. Now indeed, said *Don Quixote*, you have hit the point, *Sancho*, which only can, and must, make me change my determinate resolution. I neither can, nor ought to draw my sword, as I have often told you, against any who are not dubbed knights. To you it belongs, *Sancho*, to revenge the affront offered to your *Dapple*; and I from hence will encourage and assist you with my voice, and with salutary instructions. There is no need, Sir, to be revenged on any body, answered *Sancho*; for good christians should not take revenge for injuries: besides, I will settle it with my ass to submit the injury done him to my will, which is, to live peaceably all the days that heaven shall give me of life. Since this is your resolution, good *Sancho*, discreet *Sancho*, christian *Sancho*, and pure *Sancho*, replied *Don Quixote*, let us leave these phantoms, and seek better and more substantial adventures: for this country, I see, is like to afford us many and very extraordinary ones. Then he wheeled *Rozinante* about: *Sancho* took his *Dapple*: death and all his flying squadron returned to their cart, and pursued their way. And this was the happy conclusion of the terrible adventure of death's cart; thanks to the wholesome advice *Sancho Pança* gave his master, to whom, the day following, there fell out an adventure, no less surprising than the former, with an enamoured knight-errant.

C H A P. XII.

Of the strange adventure, which befel the valorous Don Quixote with the brave knight of the looking-glasses.

DON QUIXOTE and his squire passed the night, ensuing the rencounter with death, under some

lofty and shady trees. *Don Quixote*, at *Sancho's* persuasion, refreshed himself with some of the provisions carried by *Dapple*; and, during supper, *Sancho* said to his master: Sir, what a fool should I have been, had I chosen, as a reward for my good news, the spoils of the first adventure your worship should achieve, before the three ass-colts! Verily, verily, A sparrow in the hand is better than a vulture upon the wing. However, *Sancho*, answered *Don Quixote*, had you suffered me to give the onset, as I had a mind to do, your share of the booty would at least have been the emperor's crown of gold, and *Cupid's* painted wings; for I would have plucked them off against the grain, and put them into your possession. The crowns and scepters of your theatrical emperors, answered *Sancho*, never were of pure gold, but of tinsel, or copper. It is true, replied *Don Quixote*; nor would it be fit, that the decorations of a play should be real, but counterfeit, and meer shew, as comedy it self is, which I would have you value and take into favour, and consequently the actors and authors; for they are all instruments of much benefit to the common-weal, setting at every step a looking-glass before our eyes, in which we see very lively representations of the actions of human life: and there are no comparisons, which more truly present to us what we are, and what we should be, than comedy and comedians. Tell me, have you not seen a play acted, in which kings, emperors, popes, lords, and ladies are introduced, besides divers other personages: one acts the pimp, another the cheat, this the merchant, that the soldier, one a designing fool, another a foolish lover; and when the play is done, and the actors undressed, they are all again upon a level? Yes, marry, have I, quoth *Sancho*. Why, the very same thing, said *Don Quixote*, happens on the stage of this world, whereon some play the part of emperors, others of popes; in short, all the parts that can be introduced in a comedy. But in the conclusion, that is, at the end of our life, death strips us of all the robes, which made the difference, and we remain

main upon the level and equal in the grave. A brave comparison, quoth *Sancho*, but not so new (for I have heard it many and different times) as that of the game at chess; in which, while the game lasts, every piece has its particular office, and, when the game is ended, they are all huddled together, mixed, and put into a bag, which is for all the world like being buried after we are dead. *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, you are every day growing less simple and more discreet. And good reason why, answered *Sancho*; for some of your worship's discretion must needs stick to me, as lands, that in themselves are barren and dry, by dunging and cultivating come to bear good fruit. My meaning is, that your worship's conversation has been the dung laid upon the barren soil of my dry understanding, and the cultivation has been the time I have been in your service, and in your company; and by that I hope to produce fruit like any blessing, and such as will not disparage or deviate from the seeds of good-breeding, which your worship has sown in my shallow understanding. *Don Quixote* smiled at *Sancho's* affected speeches, that appearing to him to be true, which he had said of his improvement: for every now and then he surprized him by his manner of talking; though always, or for the most part, when *Sancho* would either speak in contradiction to, or in imitation of, the courtier, he ended his discourse with falling headlong from the height of his simplicity into the depth of his ignorance; and that, in which he most displayed his elegance and memory, was, his bringing in proverbs, whether to the purpose or not of what he was discoursing about, as may be seen and observed throughout the progress of this history.

In these and other discourses they spent great part of the night, and *Sancho* had a mind to let down the portcullices of his eyes, as he used to say when he was inclined to sleep: and so unrigging *Dapple* he turned him loose into abundant pasture. But he did not take off the saddle from *Roxinante's* back, it being the express command of his master that he should continue saddled,

saddled, all the time they kept the field, or did not sleep under a roof: for it was an ancient established custom, and religiously observed among knights-errant, to take off the bridle, and hang it at the pommel of the saddle; but by no means to take off the saddle. *Sancho* observed this rule, and gave *Roxinante* the same liberty he had given *Dapple*: the friendship of which pair was so singular and reciprocal, that there is a tradition handed down from father to son, that the author of this faithful history compiled particular chapters upon that subject: but, to preserve the decency and decorum due to so heroic an history, he would not insert them; though sometimes, waving this precaution, he writes, that, as soon as the two beasts came together, they would fall to scratching one another with their teeth, and when they were tired, or satisfied, *Roxinante* would stretch his neck at least half a yard across *Dapple's*, and both, fixing their eyes attentively on the ground, would stand three days in that manner, at least so long as they were let alone, or 'till hunger compelled them to seek some food. It is reported, I say, that the author had compared their friendship to that of *Nisus* and *Euryalus*, or that of *Pylades* and *Orestes*; whence it may appear, to the admiration of all people, how firm the friendship of these two peaceable animals must have been; to the shame of men, who so little know how to preserve the rules of friendship towards one another. Hence the sayings, A friend cannot find a friend; Reeds become darts; and (as the poet sings) From a friend to a friend, the bug, &c. ¹ Let no one think, that the author was at all out of the way, when he compared the friendship of these animals to that of men: for men have received divers wholesome instructions, and many lessons of importance, from beasts; such as the clyster from storks, the vomit and gratitude from dogs, vigilance from cranes; industry from ants, modesty from elephants, and fidelity from horses.

At

¹ The author here quotes either the beginning of some old song, or of some well-known proverb, the remainder of which we cannot supply, and consequently cannot compleat the sense.

At length *Sancho* fell asleep at the foot of a cork-tree, and *Don Quixote* slumbered under an oak. But it was not long before he was awaked by a noise behind him; and starting up, he began to look about, and to listen from whence the noise came. Presently he perceived two men on horseback, one of whom dismounting said to the other: Alight, friend, and unbridle the horses; for this place seems as if it would afford them pasture enough, and me that silence and solitude my amorous thoughts need so much. The saying this, and laying himself along on the ground, were both in one instant, and, at throwing himself down, his armour made a rattling noise: a manifest token, from whence *Don Quixote* concluded he must be a knight-errant: and going to *Sancho*, who was fast asleep, he pulled him by the arm, and having with some difficulty waked him, he said to him, with a low voice: brother *Sancho*, we have an adventure. God send it be a good one, answered *Sancho*, and, pray, Sir, where may her ladyship madam adventure be? Where, *Sancho*? replied *Don Quixote*; turn your eyes, and look, and you will see a knight-errant lying along, who, to my thoughts, does not seem to be over-pleased; for I saw him throw himself off his horse, and stretch himself on the ground, with some signs of discontent; and his armour rattled as he fell. But by what do you gather, quoth *Sancho*, that this is an adventure? I will not say, answered *Don Quixote*, that this is altogether an adventure, but an introduction to one; for adventures usually begin thus. But hearken; for methinks he is tuning a lute of some sort or other, and by his spitting and clearing his pipes he should be preparing himself to sing. In good faith, so it is, answered *Sancho*, and he must be some knight or other in love. There is no knight-errant but is so, quoth *Don Quixote*: and let us listen to him; for by the thread we shall guess at the bottom of his thoughts, if he sings: for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. *Sancho* would have replied to his master; but the knight of the wood's voice, which

was neither very bad nor very good, hindered him, and, while they both stood amazed, they heard that what he sung was this.

S O N N E T.

*Bright auth'ress of my good or ill,
Prescribe the law I must observe ;
My heart, obedient to thy will,
Shall never from its duty swerve.*

*If you refuse my griefs to know,
The stifled anguish seals my fate ;
But if your ears would drink my voice,
Love shall himself the tale relate.*

*Tho' contraries my heart compose,
Hard as the diamond's solid frame,
And soft as yielding wax that flows,
To thee, my fair, 'tis still the same.*

*Take it, for ev'ry stamp prepar'd ;
Imprint what characters you choose ;
The faithful tablet, soft or hard,
The dear impression ne'er shall lose.*

With a deep *Ab*, fetched, as it seemed, from the very bottom of his heart, the knight of the wood ended his song ; and, after some pause, with a mournful and complaining voice, he said : O the most beautiful and most ungrateful woman of the world ! is it then possible, *Casildea de Vandalia*, that you should suffer this your captive knight to consume and pine away in continual travels, and in rough and laborious toils ? Is it not enough, that I have caused you to be acknowledged the most consummate beauty in the world, by all the knights of *Navarre*, all those of *Leon*, all the *Andalusians*, all the *Castilians*, ay, and all the knights of *La Mancha* too ? Not so, quoth *Don Quixote* ; for I am of *La Mancha*, and never have acknowledged any such thing ; neither could I, nor ought I to confess a thing

thing so prejudicial to the beauty of my mistress : now you see, *Sancho*, how this knight raves : but let us listen ; perhaps he will make some farther declaration. Ay marry will he, replied *Sancho* ; for he seems to be in a strain of complaining for a month to come. But it was not so ; for the knight, over-hearing somebody talk near him, proceeded no farther in his lamentation, but stood up, and said, with an audible and courteous voice : Who goes there ? what are ye ? of the number of the happy, or of the afflicted ? Of the afflicted, answered *Don Quixote*. Come hither to me then, answered the knight of the wood, and make account you come to sorrow and affliction it self. *Don Quixote*, finding he returned so moving and civil an answer, went up to him, and *Sancho* did the same. The wailing knight laid hold of *Don Quixote* by the arm, saying : Sit down here, sir knight ; for, to know that you are such, and one of those who profess knight-errantry, it is sufficient to have found you in this place, where your companions are solitude and the night dew, the natural beds and proper stations of knights-errant. To which *Don Quixote* answered : A knight I am, and of the profession you say ; and, although sorrows, disgraces, and misfortunes have got possession of my mind, yet they have not chased away that compassion I have for other men's misfortunes. From what you sung just now I gathered, that yours are of the amorous kind ; I mean, occasioned by the love you bear to that ungrateful fair you named in your complaint. Whilst they were thus discoursing, they sat down together upon the hard ground, very peaceably and sociably, as if, at day-break, they were not to break one another's heads. Peradventure you are in love, sir knight, said he of the wood to *Don Quixote*. By misadventure I am, answered *Don Quixote* ; though the mischiefs arising from well-placed affections ought rather to be accounted blessings than disasters. That is true, replied he of the wood, supposing that disdain did not disturb our reason and understanding ; but when they are many, they seem to have the nature of revenge. I never was disdained

by my mistress, answered *Don Quixote*. No verily, quoth *Sancho*, who stood close by; for my lady is as gentle as a lamb, and as soft as a print of butter. Is this your squire? demanded the knight of the wood. He is, replied *Don Quixote*. I never in my life saw a squire, replied the knight of the wood, who durst presume to talk, where his lord was talking: at least yonder stands mine, as tall as his father, and it cannot be proved, that he ever opened his lips where I was speaking. In faith, quoth *Sancho*, I have talked, and can talk, before one as good as—and perhaps,—but let that rest; for the more you stir it—The knight of the wood's squire took *Sancho* by the arm, and said: Let us two go where we may talk by ourselves, in squire-like discourse, all we have a mind to, and leave these masters of ours to have their bellies full of relating the histories of their loves to each other: for I warrant they will not have done before to-morrow morning. With all my heart, quoth *Sancho*, and I will tell you who I'am, that you may see whether I am fit to make one among the most talkative squires. Hereupon the two squires withdrew; between whom there passed a dialogue as pleasant as that of their masters was grave.

C H A P. XIII.

Wherein is continued the adventure of the knight of the wood, with the wise, new, and pleasant dialogue between the two squires.

THE knights and squires were separated, the latter relating the story of their lives, and the former that of their loves: but the history begins with the conversation between the servants, and afterwards proceeds to that of the masters: and it says, that being gone a little apart, the squire of the wood said to *Sancho*: It is a toilsome life we lead, Sir, we who are squires to knights-errant: in good truth we eat our bread in the sweat of our brows, which is one of the curses god laid upon our first parents. It may also be said,

said, added *Sancho*, that we eat it in the frost of our bodies; for who endure more heat and cold than your miserable squires to knight-errantry? nay, it would not be quite so bad, did we but eat at all; for good fare lessens care: but it now and then happens, that we pass a whole day or two without breaking our fast, unless it be upon air. All this may be endured, quoth he of the wood, with the hopes we entertain of the reward: for if the knight-errant, whom a squire serves, is not over and above unlucky, he must, in a short time, find himself recompensed, at least, with a handsome government of some island, or some pretty earldom. I, replied *Sancho*, have already told my master, that I should be satisfied with the government of any island; and he is so noble and so generous, that he has promised it me a thousand times. I, said he of the wood, should think my self amply rewarded for all my services with a canonry, and my master has already ordered me one. Why then, quoth *Sancho*, be-like your master is a knight in the ecclesiastical way, and so has it in his power to bestow these sort of rewards on his faithful squires: but mine is a meer layman; though I remember some discreet persons (but in my opinion with no very good design) advised him to endeavour to be an archbishop: but he rejected their counsel, and would be nothing but an emperor. I trembled all the while, lest he should take it into his head to be of the church, because I am not qualified to hold ecclesiastical preferments; and, to say the truth, sir, though I look like a man, I am a very beast in church matters. Truly, your worship is under a great mistake, quoth he of the wood; for your insular governments are not all of them so inviting: some are crabbed, some poor, and some unpleasant; in short, the best and most desirable of them carries with it a heavy burthen of cares and inconveniencies, which the unhappy wight, to whose lot it falls, must unavoidably undergo. It would be far better for us, who profess this cursed service, to retire home to our houses, and pass our time there in more easy employments, such as hunting or fishing: for what squire is

there in the world so poor as not to have his nag, his brace of grey-hounds, and his angle-rod, to divert himself withal in his own village? I want nothing of all this, answered *Sancho*: it is true, indeed, I have no horse, but then I have an ass that is worth twice as much as my master's steed. God send me a bad easter, and may it be the first that comes, if I would swap with him, though he should give me four bushels of barley to boot. Perhaps, sir, you will take for a joke the price I set upon my *Dapple*, for *dapple* is the colour of my ass. And then I cannot want grey-hounds, our town being over-stocked with them: besides, sporting is the more pleasant, when it is at other people's charge. Really and truly, Signor squire, answered he of the wood, I have resolved and determined with my self to quit the frolicks of these knights-errant, and to get me home again to our village, and bring up my children; for I have three, like three oriental pearls. And I have two, quoth *Sancho*, fit to be presented to the pope himself in person, and especially a girl, that I am breeding up for a countess, if it please god, in spite of her mother. And, pray, what may be the age of the young lady you are breeding up for a countess? demanded he of the wood. Fifteen years, or thereabouts, answered *Sancho*: but she is as tall as a lance, as fresh as an *April*-morning, and as strong as a porter. These are qualifications, said he of the wood, not only for a countess, but for a nymph of the green grove. Ah the whoreson young slut! how buxome must the jade be! To which *Sancho* answered somewhat angrily; she is no whore, nor was her mother one before her, nor shall either of them be so, god willing, whilst I live. And, pray, speak more civilly; for such language is unbecoming a person educated, as your worship has been, among knights-errant, who are courtesy it self. How little does your worship, Signor squire, understand what belongs to praising, quoth he of the wood: what! do you not know, that when some knight, at a bull-feast, gives the bull a home thrust with his lance, or when any one does a thing well, the common-people usual-

ly

ly cry; how cleverly the son of a whore did it! and what seems to carry reproach with it, is indeed a notable commendation? I would have you renounce those sons or daughters, whose actions do not render their parents deserving of praise in that fashion. I do renounce them, answered *Sancho*; and in this sense, and by this same rule, if you mean no otherwise, you may call my wife and children all the whores and bawds you please; for all they do or say are perfections worthy of such praises: and, that I may return and see them again, I beseech god to deliver me from mortal sin, that is, from this dangerous profession of a squire, into which I have run a second time, enticed and deluded by a purse of a hundred ducats, which I found one day in the midst of the fable mountain; and the devil is continually setting before my eyes, here and there, and every where, a bag full of gold pistoles, so that methinks, at every step, I am laying my hand upon it, embracing it, and carrying it home, buying lands, settling rents, and living like a prince: and all the while this runs in my head, all the toils I undergo with this fool my master, who to my knowledge is more of the madman than of the knight, become supportable and easy to me. For this reason, answered he of the wood, it is said, that covetousness bursts the bag: and now you talk of madmen, there is not a greater in the world than my master, who is one of those meant by the saying, Other folks burthens break the ass's back: for, that another knight may recover his wits, he loses his own, and is searching after that, which, when found, may chance to hit him in the teeth. By the way, is he in love? demanded *Sancho*. Yes, quoth he of the wood, with one *Casildea de Vandalia*, one of the most whimsical dames in the world. But that is not the foot he halts on at present: he has some other crotchets of more consequence in his pate, and we shall hear more of them anon¹. There is no road so even, replied *Sancho*, but it has some stumbling places or rubs in it: In other folks houses they boil beans, but in mine whole kettles-

¹ A small hint of what is to be expected from this knight.

tles-full : Madness will have more followers than discretion. But if the common saying be true, that 'tis some relief to have partners in grief, I may comfort my self with your worship, who serve a master as crack-brained as my own. Crack-brained, but valiant, answered he of the wood, and more knavish, than crack-brained, or valiant. Mine is not so, answered *Sancho* : I can assure you, he has nothing of the knave in him ; on the contrary he has a soul as dull as a pitcher ; knows not how to do ill to any, but good to all ; bears no malice ; a child may persuade him it is night at noon-day : and for this simplicity I love him as my life, and cannot find in my heart to leave him, let him commit never so many extravagancies. For all that, brother and Signor, quoth he of the wood, if the blind lead the blind, both are in danger of falling into the ditch. We had better turn us fairly about, and go back to our hovels ; for they, who seek adventures, do not always meet with good ones.

Here *Sancho* beginning to spit every now and then, and very dry, the squire of the wood, who saw and observed it, said : Methinks, we have talked 'till our tongues cleave to the roofs of our mouths : but I have brought, hanging at my saddle-bow, that which will loosen them : and rising up, he soon returned with a large bottle of wine, and a pasty half a yard long : and this is no exaggeration ; for it was of a tame rabbit, so large, that *Sancho*, at lifting it, thought verily it must contain a whole goat, or at least a large kid. *Sancho*, viewing it, said : And does your worship carry all this about with you ? Why, what did you think ? answered the other : do you take me for some holyday-squire ? I have a better cupboard behind me on my horse, than a general has with him upon a march. *Sancho* fell to, without staying to be entreated, and, swallowing mouthfuls in the dark, said :

1 Literally, a squire of water and wool. The Spaniards generally have a footman only to wait upon them to mafs, especially upon grand days ; who step before to the font, and sprinkle their masters or mistresses with holy-water, but neither eat nor drink at their masters houses.

said : Your worship is indeed a squire, trusty and loyal, wanting for nothing, magnificent, and great, as this banquet demonstrates (which if it came not hither by enchantment, at least it looks like it) and not as I am, a poor unfortunate wretch, who have nothing in my wallet but a piece of cheese, and that so hard, that you may knock out a giant's brains with it, and, to bear it company, four dozen of carobes¹, and as many hazel-nuts and walnuts; thanks to my master's stinginess, and to the opinion he has, and the order he observes, that knights-errant ought to feed and diet themselves only upon dried fruits and wild fallads. By my faith, brother, replied he of the wood, I have no stomach for your wild pears, nor your sweet thistles, nor your mountain roots: let our masters there have them, with their opinions and laws of chivalry, and let them eat what they commend. I carry cold meats, and this bottle hanging at my saddle-pommel, happen what will; and such a reverence I have for it, and so much I love it, that few minutes pass but I give it a thousand kisses, and a thousand hugs. And so saying, he put it into *Sancho's* hand, who, grasping and setting it to his mouth, stood gazing at the stars for a quarter of an hour: and, having done drinking, he let fall his head on one side, and, fetching a deep sigh, said: O whoreson rogue! how catholic it is! You see now, quoth he of the wood, hearing *Sancho's whoreson*, how you have commended this wine in calling it whoreson. I confess my error, answered *Sancho*, and see plainly, that it is no discredit to any body to be called son of a whore, when it comes under the notion of praising. But tell me, Sir, by the life of him you love best, is not this wine of *Ciudad Real*? You have a distinguishing palate, answered he of the wood: it is of no other growth, and besides has some years over its head. Trust me for that, quoth *Sancho*: depend upon it, I always hit right, and guess the kind. But is it not strange, Signor squire, that I should have so great and natural an instinct in the business of knowing

¹ A cod so called in *La Mancha*, with flat seeds in it, which green or ripe is harsh, but sweet and pleasant when it is dried.

knowing wines, that, let me but smell to any, I hit upon the country, the kind, the flavour, and how long it will keep, how many changes it will undergo, with all other circumstances appertaining to wines? But no wonder; for I have had in my family, by the father's side, the two most exquisite tasters, that *La Mancha* has known for many ages; for proof whereof there happened to them what I am going to relate. To each of them was given a taste of a certain hog'shead, and their opinion asked of the condition, quality, goodness, or badness of the wine. The one tried it with the tip of his tongue; the other only put his nose to it. The first said, the wine flavoured of iron; the second said, it had rather a tang of goat's leather. The vintner protested, the vessel was clean, and the wine neat, so that it could not taste either of iron or leather. Notwithstanding this, the two famous tasters stood positively to what they had said. Time went on; the wine was sold off, and, at rinsing the hog'shead, there was found in it a small key hanging to a leathern thong. Judge then, Sir, whether one of that race may not very well undertake to give his opinion in these matters. Therefore I say, quoth he of the wood, let us give over seeking adventures, and, since we have a good loaf of bread, let us not look for cheesecakes; and let us get home to our cabins, for there god will find us, if it be his will. I will serve my master, 'till he arrives at *Saragossa*, quoth *Sancho*, and then we shall all understand one another.

In fine, the two good squires talked and drank so much, that it was high time sleep should tie their tongues, and allay their thirst, for to quench it was impossible: and thus both of them, keeping fast hold of the almost empty bottle, with their meat half chewed, fell fast asleep; where we will leave them at present, to relate what passed between the *knight of the wood* and him of the *sorrowful figure*.

C H A P. XIV.

In which is continued the adventure of the knight of the wood.

AMONG sundry discourses, which passed between *Don Quixote* and the *knight of the wood*, the history tells us, that he of the wood said to *Don Quixote*: In short, Sir knight, I would have you to know, that my destiny, or rather my choice, led me to fall in love with the peerless *Casildea de Vandalia*. Peerless I call her, both on account of her stature, and the excellency of her state and beauty. This same *Casildea* then, I am speaking of, repaid my honourable thoughts and virtuous desires by employing me, as *Hercules* was by his stepmother, in many and various perils, promising me at the end of each of them, that the next should crown my hopes: but she still goes on, adding link upon link to the chain of my labours, insomuch that they are become without number; nor can I guess, which will be the last, and that which is to give a beginning to the accomplishment of my good wishes. One time she commanded me to go and challenge that famous giantess of *Sevil* called *Giralda*¹, who is so stout and strong, as being made of brass, and, without stirring from the place, is the most changeable and unsteady woman in the world. I came, I saw, I conquered: I made her stand still, and fixed her to a point; for in above a week's time no wind blew but the north. Another time she sent me to weigh the ancient stones of the stout bulls of *Guisando*, an enterprize fitter for porters than knights; and another time she commanded me to plunge headlong into *Cabra's* cave (an unheard-of and dreadful attempt) and to bring her a particular relation of what is locked up in that obscure abyss. I stopped the motion of the *Giralda*, I weighed

¹ A brass statue on a steeple in *Sevil*, which serves for a weather-cock. Here, and in some other places, the jest seems a little too open: but *Don Quixote* is so serious and so intent, that he can see no double entendres.

weighed the bulls of *Guisando*, I precipitated myself into the cavern of *Cabra*, and brought to light the hidden secrets of that abyfs : and yet my hopes are dead, O how dead ! and her commands and disdains alive, O how alive ! In short, she has at last commanded me to travel over all the provinces of *Spain*, and oblige all the knights, I shall find wandering therein, to confess, that she alone exceeds in beauty all beauties this day living, and that I am the most valiant and the most completely enamoured knight in the world. In obedience to which command, I have already traversed the greatest part of *Spain*, and have vanquished divers knights, who have dared to contradict me. But what I am most proud of, and value myself most upon, is the having vanquished in single combat the so renowned knight *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, and made him confess, that my *Casildea* is more beautiful than his *Dulcinea* : and I make account, that, in this conquest alone, I have vanquished all the knights in the world ; for that very *Don Quixote* I speak of has conquered them all, and, I having overcome him, his glory, his fame, and his honour are transferred and passed over to my person ; for the victor's renown rises in proportion to that of the vanquished : so that the innumerable exploits of the said *Don Quixote* are already mine, and placed to my account.

Don Quixote was amazed to hear the knight of the wood, and was ready a thousand times to give him the lye, and *You lye* was at the tip of his tongue : but he restrained himself the best he could, in order to make him confess the lye with his own mouth ; and therefore he said very calmly : Sir knight, that you may have vanquished most of the knights-errant of *Spain*, yea, and of the whole world, I will not dispute ; but that you have conquered *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, I somewhat doubt : it might indeed be somebody resembling him, though there are very few such. Why not ? replied he of the wood : by the canopy of heaven, I fought with *Don Quixote*, vanquished him, and made him submit ; by the same token that he is tall of stature, thin-visaged, upright-bodied, robust-limbed,

limbed, grizzle-haired, hawk-nosed, with large, black mustachoes : he gives himself the name of *the knight of the sorrowful figure* : his squire is a country fellow called *Sancho Pança* : he oppresses the back, and governs the reins, of a famous steed called *Rozinante* : in a word, he has for the mistress of his thoughts one *Dulcinea del Toboso*, sometime called *Aldonza Lorenzo* ; in like manner as mine, who, because her name was *Casfildea*, and being of *Andalusia*, is now distinguished by the name of *Casfildea de Vandalia*. If all these tokens are not sufficient to prove the truth of what I say, here is my sword, which shall make incredulity itself believe it. Be not in a passion, Sir knight, said *Don Quixote*, and hear what I have to say. You are to know, that this *Don Quixote*, you speak of, is the dearest friend I have in the world, insomuch that I may say he is as it were my very self ; and by the tokens and marks you have given of him, so exact and so precise, I cannot but think it must be he himself that you have subdued. On the other side, I see with my eyes, and feel with my hands, that it cannot be the same, unless it be, that, having many enchanters his enemies (one especially, who is continually persecuting him) some one or other of them may have assumed his shape, and suffered himself to be vanquished, in order to defraud him of the same his exalted feats of chivalry have acquired, over the face of the whole earth. And, for confirmation hereof, you must know, that these enchanters his enemies, but two days ago, transformed the figure and person of the beautiful *Dulcinea del Toboso* into those of a dirty, mean, country wench ; and in like manner they must have transformed *Don Quixote*. And if all this be not sufficient to justify this truth, here stands *Don Quixote* himself, ready to maintain it by force of arms, on foot, or on horseback, or in whatever manner you please. And so saying, he rose up, and, grasping his sword, expected what resolution the *knight of the wood* would take : who very calmly answered, and said : A good paymaster is in pain for no pawn : he, who could once vanquish you, Signor *Don Quixote*, when you were transformed

transformed, may well hope to make you yield in your own proper person. But as knights-errant should by no means do their feats of arms in the dark, like robbers and ruffians, let us wait for day-light, that the sun may be witness of our exploits : and the condition of our combat shall be, that the conquered shall be entirely at the mercy and disposal of the conqueror, to do with him whatever he pleases, provided always, that he command nothing but what a knight may with honour submit to. I am entirely satisfied with this condition and compact, answered *Don Quixote* ; and hereupon they both went to look for their squires, whom they found snoring in the very same posture in which sleep had seized them. They awaked them, and ordered them to get ready their steeds ; for, at sunrise, they were to engage in a bloody and unparalleled single combat. At which news *Sancho* was thunder-struck, and ready to swoon, in dread of his master's safety, from what he had heard the squire of the wood tell of his master's valour. But the two squires, without speaking a word, went to look for their cattle, and found them altogether ; for the three horses and *Dapple* had already smelt one another out.

By the way the squire of the wood said to *Sancho* : You must understand, brother, that the fighters of *Andalusia* have a custom, when they are godfathers in any combat, not to stand idle with their arms across, while their godsons are fighting ¹. This I say to give you notice, that while our masters are engaged, we must fight too, and make splinters of one another. This custom, Signor squire, answered *Sancho*, may be current, and pass among the ruffians and fighters you speak of ; but among the squires of knights-errant, no, not in thought : at least I have not heard my master talk of any such custom, and he has all the laws and ordinances of knight-errantry by heart. But, taking it for granted, that there is an express
statute

¹ In the tilts and tournaments the seconds were a kind of godfathers to the principals, and certain ceremonies were performed upon those occasions.

statute for the squires engaging while their masters are at it, yet will I not comply with it, but rather pay the penalty imposed upon such peaceable squires; which I dare say cannot be above a couple of pounds of white wax¹, and I will rather pay them; for I know they will cost me less than the money I shall spend in tents to get my head cured, which I already reckon as cut and divided in twain. Besides, another thing which makes it impossible for me to fight, is, my having no sword; for I never wore one in my life. I know a remedy for that, said he of the wood: I have here a couple of linen bags of the same size; you shall take one, and I the other, and we will have a bout at bag-blows with equal weapons. With all my heart, answered *Sancho*; for such a battle will rather dust our jackets, than wound our persons. It must not be quite so neither, replied the other: for, lest the wind should blow them aside, we must put in them half a dozen clean and smooth pebbles, of equal weight; and thus we may brush one another without much harm or damage. Body of my father! answered *Sancho*, what sable fur, what bottoms of carded cotton, he puts into the bags, that we may not break our noddles, nor beat our bones to powder! But though they should be filled with balls of raw silk, be it known to you, Sir, I shall not fight; let our masters fight, and hear of it in another world, and let us drink and live; for time takes care to take away our lives, without our seeking new appetites to destroy them, before they reach their appointed term and season, and drop with ripeness. For all that, replied he of the wood, we must fight, if it be but for half an hour. No, no, answered *Sancho*, I shall not be so discourteous, nor so ungrateful, as to have any quarrel at all, be it never so little, with a gentleman, after having eat of his bread, and drank of his drink: besides, who the devil can set about dry fighting, without anger, and without provocation?

¹ Some small offences are fined, in *Spain*, at a pound or two of white wax for the tapers in Churches, &c.—and confessors pretty frequently enjoin it as a penance.

vocation? If that be all, quoth he of the wood, I will provide a sufficient remedy; which is, that, before we begin the combat, I will come up to your worship, and fairly give you three or four good cuffs, which will lay you flat at my feet, and awaken your choler, though it slept sounder than a dormouse. Against that expedient, answered *Sancho*, I have another not a whit behind it: I will take me a good cudgel, and, before your worship reaches me to awaken my choler, I will bastinado yours so sound asleep, that it shall never awake more but in another world, where it is well known I am not a man to let any body handle my face; and let every one take heed to the arrow: though the safest way would be for each man to let his choler sleep; for no body knows what is in another, and some people go out for wool, and come home shorn themselves; and god in all times blessed the peace-makers, and cursed the peace-breakers; for if a cat, pursued, and pent in a room, and hard put to it, turns into a lion, god knows what I that am a man may turn into: and therefore from henceforward I intimate to your worship, Signor squire, that all the damage and mischief, that shall result from our quarrel, must be placed to your account. It is well, replied he of the wood; god send us day-light, and we shall see what will come of it.

And now a thousand sorts of enamelled birds began to chirp in the trees, and in variety of joyous songs seemed to give the good-morrow, and salute the blooming *Aurora*, who began now to discover the beauty of her face through the gates and balconies of the east, shaking from her locks an infinite number of liquid pearls, and, in that delicious liquor, bathing the herbs, which also seemed to sprout, and rain a kind of seed-pearl. At her approach the willows distilled savoury manna, the fountains smiled, the brooks murmured, the woods were cheered, and the meads were gilded. But scarcely had the clearness of the day given opportunity to see and distinguish objects, when the first thing, that presented itself to *Sancho's* eyes,

was

was the squire of the wood's nose, which was so large, that it almost overshadowed his whole body. In a word, it is said to have been of an excessive size, hawked in the middle, and full of warts and carbuncles, of the colour of a mulberry, and hanging two fingers breadth below his mouth. The size, the colour, the carbuncles, and the crookedness, so disfigured his face, that *Sancho*, at sight thereof, began to tremble hand and foot, like a child in a fit, and resolved within himself to take two hundred cuffs before his choler should awaken to encounter that hobgoblin.

Don Quixote viewed his antagonist, and found he had his helmet on, and the beaver down, so that he could not see his face: but he observed him to be a square-made man, and not very tall. Over his armour he wore a kind of surcoat, or loose coat, seemingly of the finest gold, besprinkled with fundry little moons of resplendent looking-glasses, which made a most gallant and splendid show. A great number of green, yellow, and white feathers waved about his helmet. His lance, which stood leaning against a tree, was very large and thick, and headed with pointed steel above a span long. *Don Quixote* viewed, and noted every thing, judging by all he saw and remarked, that the afore said knight must needs be of great strength: but he was not therefore daunted, like *Sancho Pança*; on the contrary, with a gallant boldness he said to the *knight of the looking-glasses*: Sir knight, if your great eagerness to fight has not exhausted too much of your courtesy, I entreat you to lift up your beaver a little, that I may see whether the sprightliness of your countenance be answerable to that of your figure. Whether you be vanquished or victorious in this enterprize, Sir knight, answered he of the *looking-glasses*, there will be time and leisure enough for seeing me; and if I do not now comply with your desire, it is because I think I should do a very great wrong to the beautiful *Casildea de Vandalia*, to lose so much time as the lifting up my beaver would take up, before I make you confess what you know I pretend to. However, while we are getting on horse-back,

back, said *Don Quixote*, you may easily tell me whether I am that *Don Quixote* you said you had vanquished. To this I answer, quoth he of the looking-glasses, that you are as like that very knight I vanquished, as one egg is like another: but since you say you are persecuted by enchanters, I dare not be positive, whether you are the same person, or no. That is sufficient, answered *Don Quixote*, to make me believe you are deceived: however, to undeceive you quite, let us to horse, and in less time than you would have spent in lifting up your beer, if god, my mistress, and my arm avail me, will I see your face, and you shall see I am not that vanquished *Don Quixote* you imagine. Then, cutting short the discourse, they mounted, and *Don Quixote* wheeled *Rozinante* about to take as much ground as was convenient for encountering his opponent; and he of the *looking-glasses* did the like: but *Don Quixote* was not gone twenty paces, when he heard himself called to by the knight of the *looking-glasses*: so meeting each other half way, he of the *looking-glasses* said: Take notice, Sir knight, that the condition of our combat is, that the conquered, as I said before, shall remain at the discretion of the conqueror. I know it, answered *Don Quixote*, provided that what is commanded and imposed on the vanquished shall not exceed, nor derogate from, the laws of chivalry. So it is to be understood, answered he of the *looking-glasses*. At this juncture the squire's strange nose presented itself to *Don Quixote's* sight, who was no less surprized at it than *Sancho*, inso-much that he looked upon him to be some monster, or some strange man, such as are not common now in the world. *Sancho*, seeing his master set forth to take his career, would not stay alone with long-nose, fearing, lest one gentle wipe with that snout across his face should put an end to his battle, and he be laid sprawling on the ground either by the blow or by fear. Therefore he ran after his master, holding by the back guard of *Rozinante's* saddle; and, when he thought it was time for him to face about, he said: I beseech your worship, dear Sir, that, before you

turn

turn about to engage, you will be so kind as to help me up into yon cork-tree, from whence I can see better, and more to my liking, than from the ground, the gallant encounter you are about to have with that knight. I believe, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, you have more mind to climb and mount a scaffold, to see the bull-sports without danger. To tell you the truth, Sir, answered *Sancho*, the prodigious nose of that squire astonishes and fills me with dread, and I dare not stand near him. In truth, said *Don Quixote*, it is so frightful, that, were I not who I am, I should be afraid my self; and therefore come, and I will help you up. While *Don Quixote* was busied in helping *Sancho* up into the cork tree, he of the *looking-glasses* took as large a compass as he thought necessary, and believing that *Don Quixote* had done the like, without waiting for sound of trumpet, or any other signal, he turned about his horse, who was not a whit more active, nor more promising than *Roxinante*; and at his best speed, which was a middling trot, he advanced to encounter his enemy; but seeing him employed in helping up *Sancho*, he reined in his steed, and stopped in the midst of his career; for which his horse was most thankful, being not able to stir any farther. *Don Quixote*, thinking his enemy was coming full speed against him, clapped spurs to *Roxinante's* lean flanks, and made him so bestir himself, that, as the history relates, this was the only time he was known to do something like running; for at all others a downright trot was all: and with this unspeakable fury he soon came up where he of the *looking-glasses* stood, striking his spurs up to the very rowels in his steed, without being able to make him stir a finger's length from the place, where he made the full stand in his career. In this good time, and at this juncture, *Don Quixote* found his adversary embarrassed with his horse, and encumbered with his lance; for either he did not know how, or had not time to set it in its rest. *Don Quixote*, who heeded none of these inconveniencies, with all safety, and without the least danger, attacked him of the *looking-glasses* with

with such force, that, in spite of him, he bore him to the ground over his horse's crupper; and such was his fall, that he lay motionless, without any signs of life. *Sancho* no sooner saw him fallen, than he slid down from the cork-tree, and in all haste ran to his master, who, alighting from *Rozinante*, was got upon him of the *looking-glasses*, and unlacing his helmet, to see whether he was dead, or to give him air, if perchance he was alive; when he saw --- but who can express what he saw, without causing admiration, wonder, and terror in all that hear it? He saw, says the history, the very face, the very figure, the very aspect, the very physiognomy, the very effigies and picture of the batchelor *Sampson Carrasco*; and as soon as he saw him, he cried out: Come hither, *Sancho*, and behold what you must see but not believe: make haste, son, and observe what magic, what wizzards and enchanters can do. *Sancho* approached, and, seeing the batchelor *Sampson Carrasco's* face, he began to cross and blebs himself a thousand times over; and all this while the demolished cavalier shewed no signs of life; and *Sancho* said to *Don Quixote*: I am of opinion, Sir, that, right or wrong, your worship should thrust your sword down the throat of him, who seems so like the batchelor *Sampson Carrasco*: perhaps in him you may kill some one of those enchanters your enemies. You do not say amiss, quoth *Don Quixote*: for the fewer our enemies are the better: and drawing his sword to put *Sancho's* advice in execution, the squire of the *looking-glasses* drew near, without the nose that made him look so frightful, and cried aloud: Have a care, Signor *Don Quixote*, what you do; for he, who lies at your feet, is the batchelor *Sampson Carrasco* your friend, and I am his squire. *Sancho*, seeing him without that former ugliness, said to him: And the nose? To which he answered; I have it here in my pocket: and putting in his hand he pulled out a paste-board nose, painted and varnished, of the fashion we have already described: and *Sancho*, eying him more and more, with a loud voice of admiration, said: Blessed virgin defend me! Is not this *Tom Cecial* my neighbour

bour and gossip? Indeed am I, answered the unnosed squire; *Tom Cecial* I am, gossip and friend *Sancho Pança*; and I will inform you presently what conduits, lyes, and wiles brought me hither: in the mean time beg and entreat your master not to touch, maltreat, wound, or kill the *knight of the looking glasses* now at his feet; for there is nothing more sure than that he is the daring and ill-advifed batchelor, *Sampson Carrasco*, our countryman.

By this time he of the *looking-glasses* was come to himself; which *Don Quixote* perceiving, he clapped the point of his naked sword to his throat, and said: You are a dead man, knight, if you do not confess, that the peerless *Dulcinea del Toboso* excells in beauty your *Casildea de Vandalia*; and farther you must promise, if you escape from this conflict and this fall with life, to go to the city of *Toboso*, and present yourself before her on my behalf, that she may dispose of you as she shall think fit, and, if she leaves you at your own disposal, then you shall return, and find me out (for the track of my exploits will serve you for a guide, and conduct you to my presence) to tell me what passes between her and you; these conditions being entirely conformable to our articles before our battle, and not exceeding the rules of knight-errantry. I confess, said the fallen knight, that the lady *Dulcinea del Toboso's* torn and dirty shoe is preferable to the ill combed, though clean, locks of *Casildea*; and I promise to go and return from her presence to yours, and give you an exact and particular account of what you require of me. You must likewise confess and believe, added *Don Quixote*, that the knight you vanquished was not, and could not be, *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, but somebody else like him; as I do confess and believe, that you, though, in appearance, the batchelor *Sampson Carrasco*, are not he, but somebody resembling him, whom my enemies have purposely transformed into his likeness, to restrain the impetuosity of my choler, and make me use with moderation the glory of my conquest. I confess, judge of, and allow every thing, as you believe, judge of, and allow, answered the

disjointed knight: Suffer me to rise, I beseech you, if the hurt of my fall will permit, which has left me sorely bruised. *Don Quixote* helped him to rise, as did his squire *Tom Cecial*, from off whom *Sancho* could not remove his eyes, asking him things, the answers to which convinced him evidently of his being really that *Tom Cecial* he said he was. But he was so prepossessed by what his master had told him concerning the enchanters having changed the *knight of the looking-glasses* into the batchelor *Sampson Carrasco*, that he could not give credit to what he saw with his eyes. In short, master and man remained under this mistake; and he of the *looking-glasses*, with his squire, much out of humour, and in ill-plight, parted from *Don Quixote* and *Sancho*, to look for some convenient place, where he might sear-cloath himself and splinter his ribs. *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* continued their journey to *Saragossa*, where the history leaves them, to give an account who the *knight of the looking-glasses* and his nosy-squire were.

C H A P. XV.

Giving an account, who the knight of the looking-glasses and his squire were.

EXCEEDINGLY content, elated, and vain-glorious was *Don Quixote*, at having gained the victory over so valiant a knight, as he imagined him of the *looking-glasses* to be; from whose knightly word he hoped to learn, whether the enchantment of his mistress continued, the said knight being under a necessity of returning, upon pain of not being one, to give him an account of what should pass between her and him. But *Don Quixote* thought one thing, and he of the *looking-glasses* another; who, for the present, thought no farther than of finding a place, where he might plaister himself, as has been already said. The history then tells us, that, when the batchelor *Sampson Carrasco* advised *Don Quixote* to resume his intermitted exploits of chivalry, he, the priest, and the barber,

ber, had first consulted together about the means of persuading *Don Quixote* to stay peaceably and quietly at home, without distracting himself any more about his unlucky adventures; and it was concluded by general vote, and particular opinion of *Carraasco*, that they should let *Don Quixote* make another sally, since it seemed impossible to detain him, and that *Sampson* should also sally forth like a knight-errant, and encounter him in fight (for an opportunity could not be long wanting) and so vanquish him, which would be an easy matter to do; and that it should be covenanted and agreed, that the conquered should lye at the mercy of the conqueror; and so, *Don Quixote* being conquered, the batchelor knight should command him to return home to his village and house, and not stir out of it in two years, or till he had received farther orders from him: all which, it was plain, *Don Quixote*, when once overcome, would readily comply with, not to contravene or infringe the laws of chivalry; and it might so fall out, that, during his confinement, he might forget his follies, or an opportunity might offer of finding out some cure for his malady. *Carraasco* accepted of the employment, and *Tom Cecial*, *Sancho Pança's* gossip and neighbour, a pleasant-humoured, shallow-brained fellow, offered his service to be the squire. *Sampson* armed himself, as you have heard, and *Tom Cecial* fitted the counterfeit paste-board nose to his face, that he might not be known by his gossip when they met; and so they took the same road that *Don Quixote* had done, and arrived almost time enough to have been present at the adventure of death's carr. But, in short, they lighted on them in the wood, where befel them all that the prudent has been reading. And had it not been for *Don Quixote's* extraordinary opinion, that the batchelor was not the batchelor, Signor batchelor had been incapacitated for ever from taking the degree of *licenciate*, not finding so much as nests, where he thought to find birds. *Tom Cecial*, seeing how ill they had sped, and the unlucky issue of their expedition, said to the batchelor: For certain, Signor

172 *The LIFE and EXPLOITS of Sampson Carrasco*, we have been very rightly served. It is easy to design and begin an enterprize, but very often difficult to get through with it. *Don Quixote* is mad, and we think ourselves wise: he gets off sound and laughing, and your worship remains sore and sorrowful. Now, pray, which is the greater mad-man, he who is so because he cannot help it, or he who is so on purpose? To which *Sampson* answered: The difference between these two sorts of mad-men, is, that he, who cannot help being mad, will always be so, and he, who plays the fool on purpose, may give over when he thinks fit. If it be so, quoth *Tom Cecial*, I was mad when I had a mind to be your worship's squire, and now I have a mind to be so no longer, and to get me home to my house. It is fit you should, answered *Sampson*; but to think that I will return to mine, 'till I have soundly banged this same *Don Quixote*, I desire to be excused; and it is not now the desire of curing him of his madness that prompts me to seek him, but a desire of being revenged on him; for the pain of my ribs will not let me entertain more charitable considerations. Thus they two went on discouraging, 'till they came to a village, where they luckily met with a bone-setter, who cured the unfortunate *Sampson*. *Tom Cecial* went back and left him, and he staid behind meditating revenge; and the history speaks of him again in due time, not omitting to rejoice at present with *Don Quixote*.

C H A P. XVI.

Of what befall Don Quixote with a discreet gentleman of La Mancha.

DON QUIXOTE pursued his journey with the pleasure, satisfaction, and self-conceit already mentioned, imagining, upon account of his late victory, that he was the most valiant knight-errant the world could boast of in that age. He looked upon all the adventures, which should befall him from
that

that time forward, as already finished and brought to a happy conclusion: he valued not now any enchantments or enchanters: he no longer remembered the innumerable bastings he had received, during the progress of his chivalries, the stoning that had demolished half his grinders, the ingratitude of the galley-slaves, nor the boldness and shower of pack-staves of the *Yanguesian* carriers. In short, he said to himself, that, could he but hit upon the art or method of disenchanting his lady *Dulcinea*, he should not envy the greatest good-fortune that the most successful knight-errant of the past ages ever did, or could, attain to.

He was wholly taken up with these thoughts, when *Sancho* said to him: Is it not pretty odd, Sir, that I still have before my eyes the monstrous and unmeasurable nose of my gossip *Tom Cecial*? And do you really believe, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, that the knight of the *looking-glasses* was the batchelor *Sampson Carrasco*, and his squire *Tom Cecial* your gossip? I know not what to say to that, answered *Sancho*; I only know, that the marks he gave me of my house, wife, and children, could be given me by no body else but himself; and his face, when the nose was off, was *Tom Cecial's* own, as I have seen it very often in our village next door to my house; and the tone of the voice was also the very same. Come on, replied *Don Quixote*; let us reason a little upon this business. How can any one imagine, that the batchelor *Sampson Carrasco* should come knight-errant-wise, armed at all points, to fight with me? Was I ever his enemy? Have I ever given him occasion to bear me a grudge? Am I his rival? Or does he make profession of arms, as envying the fame I have acquired by them? What then shall we say, Sir, answered *Sancho*, to that knight's being so very like *Sampson Carrasco*, be he who he would, and his squire so like *Tom Cecial* my gossip? And, if it be enchantment, as your worship says, were there no other two in the world they could be made to resemble? The whole is artifice, answered *Don Quixote*, and a trick of the wicked magicians, who persecute me; who, foreseeing that I was to come off

vanquisher in the conflict, contrived, that the vanquished knight should have the face of my friend the bachelor, that the kindness I have for him might interpose between the edge of my sword, and the rigour of my arm, and moderate the just indignation of my breast, and by this means he might escape with his life, who, by cunning devices and false appearances, fought to take away mine. For proof whereof, you already know, O *Sancho*, by infallible experience, how easy a thing it is for enchanters to change one face into another, making the fair foul, and the foul fair; since, not two days ago, you beheld with your own eyes the beauty and bravery of the peerless *Dulcinea* in their highest perfection, and at the same time I saw her under the plainness and deformity of a rude country wench, with cataracts on her eyes, and a bad smell in her mouth: and if the perverse enchanter durst make so wicked a transformation, no wonder if he has done the like as to *Sampson Carrasco* and your gossip, in order to snatch the glory of the victory out of my hands. Nevertheless I comfort myself; for, in short, be it under what shape soever, I have got the better of my enemy. God knows the truth, answered *Sancho*; who, well knowing that the transformation of *Dulcinea* was all his own plot and device, was not satisfied with his master's chimerical notions, but would make no reply, lest he should let fall some word that might discover his cheat.

While they were thus discoursing, there overtook them a man upon a very fine flea-bitten mare, clad in a furtout of fine green cloath, faced with murry coloured velvet, and a hunter's cap of the same: the mare's furniture was all of the field, and ginet-fashion, murry-coloured and green. He had a *Moorish* scymitar hanging at a shoullder-belt of green and gold; and his buskins wrought like the belt. His spurs were not gilt, but varnished with green, so neat and polished, that they suited his cloaths better than if they had been of pure gold. When the traveller came up to them, he saluted them courteously, and spurring his mare, and keeping a little off, was passing on. But

Don

Don Quixote called to him : Courteous Sir, if you are going our way, and are not in haste, I should take it for a favour we might join company. Truly, Sir, answered he with the mare, I had not kept off, but for fear your horse should prove unruly in the company of my mare. Sir, answered *Sancho*, if that be all, you may safely hold in your mare ; for our's is the soberest and best-conditioned horse in the world : he never did a naughty thing in his life, upon these occasions, but once, and then my master and I paid for it seven-fold. I say again, your worship may stop if you please ; for were she served up betwixt two dishes, he would not, I assure you, so much as look her in the face. The traveller checked his mare, wondering at the air and countenance of *Don Quixote*, who rode without his helmet, which *Sancho* carried like a cloke-bag, at the pummel of his ass's pannel. And if the gentleman in green gazed much at *Don Quixote*, *Don Quixote* stared no less at him, taking him to be some person of consequence. He seemed to be about fifty years of age ; had but few gray hairs ; his visage aquiline ; his aspect between merry and serious : in a word, his mien and appearance spoke him to be a man of worth. What he in green thought of *Don Quixote*, was, that he had never seen such a figure of a man before : he admired at the length of his horse, the tallness of his stature, the meagreness of his aspect, his armour, and his deportment ; the whole such an odd figure as had not been seen in that country for many years past.

Don Quixote took good notice how the traveller surveyed him, and, reading his desire in his surprize, and being the pink of courtesy, and fond of pleasing every body, before the traveller could ask him any question, he prevented him, saying : This figure of mine, which your worship sees, being so new, and so much out of the way of what is generally in fashion, I do not wonder if you are surprized at it : but you will cease to be so, when I tell you, as I do, that I am one of those knights, whom people call *seekers of adventures*. I left my country, mortgaged my estate,

quitted my ease and pleasures, and threw myself into the arms of fortune, to carry me whither she pleased. I had a mind to revive the long-deceased chivalry; and, for some time past, stumbling here and tumbling there, falling headlong in one place, and getting up again in another, I have accomplished a great part of my design, succouring widows, protecting damsels, aiding married women and orphans; the natural and proper office of knights errant. And thus, by many valorous and christian exploits, I have merited the honour of being in print, in all, or most of, the nations of the world. Thirty thousand copies are already published of my history, and it is in the way of coming to thirty thousand thousands more, if heaven prevent it not. Finally, to sum up all in few words, or in one only, know, I am *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, otherwise called *the knight of the sorrowful figure*: and though self-praises depreciate, I am sometimes forced to publish my own commendations; but this is to be understood, when no body else is present to do it for me. So that, worthy Sir, neither this horse, this lance, this shield, nor this squire, nor all this armour together, nor the wanness of my visage, nor my meagre lankness, ought from henceforward to be matter of wonder to you, now that you know who I am, and the profession I follow.

Here *Don Quixote* was silent, and he in green was so long before he returned any answer, that it looked as if he could not hit upon a reply; but, after some pause, he said: Sir knight, you judged right of my desire by my surprize; but you have not removed the wonder raised in me at seeing you: for, supposing, as you say, that my knowing who you are might have removed it, yet it has not done so: on the contrary, now that I know it, I am in greater admiration and surprize than before. What! is it possible that there are knights-errant now in the world, and that there are histories printed of real chivalries? I never could have thought there was any body now upon earth, who relieved widows, succoured damsels, aided married women, or protected orphans, nor should yet have

have believed it, had I not seen it in your worship with my own eyes. Blessed be heaven! for this history, which your worship says is in print, of your exalted and true atchievements, must have cast into oblivion the numberless fables of fictitious knights-errant, with which the world was filled, so much to the detriment of good morals, and the prejudice and discredit of good histories. There is a great deal to be said, answered *Don Quixote*, upon this subject, whether the histories of knights-errant are fictitious or not. Why, is there any one, answered he in green, that has the least suspicion that those histories are not false? I have, quoth *Don Quixote*: but no more of that; for, if we travel any time together, I hope in god to convince you, Sir, that you have done amiss in suffering yourself to be carried away by the current of those, who take it for granted they are not true. From these last words of *Don Quixote*, the traveller began to suspect he must be some madman, and waited for a farther confirmation of his suspicion: but before they fell into any other discourse, *Don Quixote* desired him to tell him who he was, since he had given him some account of his own condition and life. To which he in the green riding-coat answered: I, Sir *knight of the sorrowful figure*, am a gentleman, born at a village, where, god willing, we shall dine to-day. I am more than indifferently rich, and my name is *Don Diego de Miranda*. I spend my time with my wife, my children, and my friends: my diversions are hunting and fishing; but I keep neither hawks nor grey hounds, only some decoy partridges, and a stout ferret. I have about six dozen of books, some *Spanish*, some *Latin*, some of history, and some of devotion: those of chivalry have not yet come over my threshold. I am more inclined to the reading of prophane authors, than religious, provided they are upon subjects of innocent amusement, the language agreeable, and the invention new and surprizing, though indeed there are but very few of this sort in *Spain*. Sometimes I eat with my neighbours and friends, and sometimes I in-

vite them : my table is neat and clean, and tolerably furnished. I neither censure others myself, nor allow others to do it before me. I enquire not into other men's lives, nor am I sharp-sighted to pry into their actions. I hear mass every day : I share my substance with the poor, making no parade of my good works, nor harbouring in my breast hypocrisy and vain-glory, those enemies, which so sily get possession of the best-guarded hearts. I endeavour to make peace between those that are at variance. I devote myself particularly to our blessed lady, and always trust in the infinite mercy of god our lord.

Sancho was most attentive to the relation of the gentleman's life and conversation ; all which appeared to him to be good and holy : and thinking that one of such a character must needs work miracles, he flung himself off his *Dapple*, and running hastily laid hold of his right stirrup ; and, with a devout heart, and almost weeping eyes, he kissed his feet more than once. Which the gentleman perceiving, said : What mean you, brother ? What kisses are these ? Pray, let me kiss on, answered *Sancho* ; for your worship is the first saint on horse-back I ever saw in all the days of my life. I am no saint, answered the gentleman, but a great sinner : you, brother, must needs be very good, as your simplicity demonstrates. *Sancho* went off, and got again upon his pannel, having forced a smile from the profound gravity of his master, and caused fresh admiration in *Don Diego*.

Don Quixote then asked him, how many children he had, telling him, that one of the things, wherein the antient philosophers, who wanted the true knowledge of god, placed the supreme happiness, was, in the gifts of nature and fortune, in having many friends, and many good children. I, Signor *Don Quixote*, answered the gentleman, have one son ; and, if I had him not, perhaps, I should think myself happier than I am, not because he is bad, but because he is not so good as I would have him. He is eighteen years old ; six he has been at *Salamanca*, learning the *Latin* and *Greek* languages, and, when I was desirous
he

he should study other sciences, I found him so over head and ears in poetry (if that may be called a science) that there was no prevailing with him to look into the law, which was what I would have had him studied; nor into divinity, the queen of all sciences. I was desirous, he should be the crown and honour of his family, since we live in an age, in which our kings highly reward useful and virtuous literature; for letters without virtue are pearls in a dunghill. He passes whole days in examining whether *Homer* expressed himself well in such a verse of the *Iliad*; whether *Martial*, in such an epigram, be obscene or not; whether such a verse in *Virgil* is to be understood this or that way. In a word, all his conversation is with the books of the aforesaid poets, and with those of *Horace*, *Perfius*, *Juvenal*, and *Tibullus*. As to the modern *Spanish* authors, he makes no great account of them; though, notwithstanding the antipathy he seems to have to the *Spanish* poetry, his thoughts are at this very time entirely taken up with making a gloss upon four verses, sent him from *Salamanca*, which, I think, were designed for a scholastic prize.

To all which *Don Quixote* answered: Children, Sir, are pieces of the bowels of their parents, and, whether good or bad, must be loved and cherished as part of ourselves. It is the duty of parents to train them up from their infancy in the paths of virtue and good-manners, and in good principles and christian discipline, that, when they are grown up, they may be the staff of their parents age, and an honour to their posterity. As to forcing them to this or that science, I do not hold it adviseable, though I think there is no harm in persuading them; and when there is no need of studying merely for bread, the student being so happy as to have it by inheritance, I should be for indulging him in the pursuit of that science, to which his genius is most inclined. And though that of poetry be less profitable than delightful, it is not one of those that are wont to disgrace the possessor. Poetry, good Sir, I take to be like a tender virgin, very young, and extremely beautiful, whom divers other virgins, namely,

namely, all the other sciences, make it their business to enrich, polish, and adorn; and to her it belongs to make use of them all, and on her part to give a lustre to them all. But this same virgin is not to be rudely handled, nor dragged through the streets, nor exposed in the turnings of the market-place, nor posted on the corners or gates of palaces. She is formed of an alchymy of such virtue, that he, who knows how to manage her, will convert her into the purest gold of inestimable price. He, who possesses her, should keep a strict hand over her, not suffering her to make excursions in obscene satires, or lifeless sonnets. She must in no wise be venal; though she need not reject the profits arising from heroic poems, mournful tragedies, or pleasant and artful comedies. She must not be meddled with by buffoons, or by the ignorant vulgar, incapable of knowing or esteeming the treasures locked up in her. And think not, Sir, that I give the appellation of *vulgar* to the common people alone: all the ignorant, though they be lords or princes, ought, and must, be taken into the number. He therefore, who, with the aforesaid qualifications, addicteth himself to the study and practice of poetry, will become famous, and his name be honoured in all the polite nations of the world. And as to what you say, Sir, that your son does not much esteem the *Spanish* poetry, I am of opinion he is not very right in that; and the reason is this: the great *Homer* did not write in *Latin*, because he was a *Greek*; nor *Virgil* in *Greek*, because he was a *Roman*. In short, all the antient poets wrote in the language they sucked in with their mother's milk, and did not hunt after foreign tongues, to express the sublimity of their conceptions. And, this being so, it is fit this custom should take place in all nations; and the *German* poet should not be disesteemed for writing in his own tongue, nor the *Castilian*, nor even the *Biscainer*, for writing in his. But your son, I should imagine, does not dislike the *Spanish* poetry, but the poets, who are merely *Spanish*, without any knowledge of other languages, or sciences, which might adorn, enliven, and assist their natural genius; though

even

even in this there may be a mistake; for it is a true opinion, that the poet is born one; the meaning of which is, that a natural poet comes forth a poet from his mother's womb, and, with this talent given him by heaven, and without farther study or art, composes things which verify the saying, *Est deus in nobis*, &c. Not but that a natural poet, who improves himself by art, will be a much better poet, and have the advantage of him, who has no other title to it but the knowledge of that art alone: and the reason is, because art cannot exceed nature, but only perfect it; so that art mixed with nature, and nature with art, form a compleat poet. To conclude my discourse, good Sir; let your son follow the direction of his stars: for, being so good a scholar, as he must needs be, and having already happily mounted the first round of the ladder of the sciences, that of the languages, with the help of these, he will by himself ascend to the top of human learning, which is no less an honour and an ornament to a gentleman, than a mitre to a bishop, or the long robe to the learned in the law. If your son writes satires injurious to the reputation of others, chide him, and tear his performances: but if he pens discourses in the manner of *Horace*, reprehending vice in general, as that poet so elegantly does, commend him, because it is lawful for a poet to write against envy, and to abuse the envious in his verses, and so of other vices, but not to single out particular characters. There are poets, who, for the pleasure of saying one smart thing, will run the hazard of being banished to the isles of *Pontus*¹. If the poet be chaste in his manners, he will be so in his verses: the pen is the tongue of the mind; such as its conceptions are, such will its productions be. And when kings and princes see the wonderful science of poetry employed on prudent, virtuous, and grave subjects, they honour, esteem, and enrich the poets, and even crown them with the leaves of that tree, which the thunder-bolt hurts not, signifying, as it were, that no body ought

to

¹ As *Ovid* was,

182 *The LIFE and EXPLOITS of*

to offend those, who wear such crowns, and whose temples are so adorned.

The gentleman in green admired much at *Don Quixote's* discourse, insomuch that he began to waver in his opinion as to his being a madman. But, in the midst of the conversation, *Sancho*, it not being much to his taste, was gone out of the road to beg a little milk of some shepherds, who were hard by milking some ewes. And now the gentleman, highly satisfied with *Don Quixote's* ingenuity and good sense, was renewing the discourse, when on a sudden *Don Quixote*, lifting up his eyes, perceived a carr with royal banners coming the same road they were going, and, believing it to be some new adventure, he called aloud to *Sancho* to come and give him his helmet. *Sancho*, hearing himself called, left the shepherds, and in all haste, pricking his *Dapple*, came where his master was, whom there befel a most dreadful and stupendous adventure.

C H A P. XVII.

Wherein is set forth the last and highest point, at which the unheard-of courage of Don Quixote ever did, or could, arrive; with the happy conclusion of the adventure of the lions.

THE history relates, that, when *Don Quixote* called out to *Sancho* to bring him his helmet, he was buying some curds of the shepherds; and, being hurried by the violent haste his master was in, knew not what to do with them, nor how to bestow them; and that he might not lose them, now they were paid for, he bethought him of clapping them into his master's helmet; and with this excellent shift back he came to learn the commands of his lord, who said to him: Friend, give me the helmet; for either I know little of adventures, or that, which I descry yonder, is one that does and will oblige me to have recourse to arms. He in the green riding-coat, hearing this, cast his eyes every way as far as he could, and discovered nothing but a carr coming towards them,
with

with two or three small flags, by which he conjectured, that the said carr was bringing some of the king's money ; and so he told *Don Quixote* : but he believed him not, always thinking and imagining, that every thing that befel him must be an adventure, and adventures upon adventures ; and thus he replied to the gentleman : Preparation is half the battle, and nothing is lost by being upon one's guard. I know by experience, that I have enemies both visible and invisible, and I know not when, nor from what quarter, nor at what time, nor in what shape, they will encounter me : and turning about, he demanded his helmet of *Sancho*, who, not having time to take out the curds, was forced to give it him as it was. *Don Quixote* took it, and, without minding what was in it, clapped it hastily upon his head ; and as the curds were squeezed and pressed, the whey began to run down the face and beard of *Don Quixote* ; at which he was so startled, that he said to *Sancho* : What can this mean, *Sancho* ? methinks my skull is softening, or my brains melting, or I sweat from head to foot ; and if I do really sweat, in truth it is not through fear, though I verily believe, I am like to have a terrible adventure of this. If you have any thing to wipe withal, give it me ; for the copious sweat quite blinds my eyes. *Sancho* said nothing, and gave him a cloth, and with it thanks to god that his master had not found out the truth. *Don Quixote* wiped himself, and took off his helmet, to see what it was that so over-cooled his head ; and, seeing some white lumps in it, he put them to his nose, and smelling to them said : By the life of my lady *Dulcinea del Toboso*, they are curds you have clapped in here, vile traitor, and inconsiderate squire ! To which *Sancho* answered with great flegm and dissimulation : If they are curds, give them me here to eat : but the devil eat them for me ; for it must be he that put them there. What ! I offer to foul your worship's helmet ? In faith, Sir, by what god gives me to understand, I too have my enchanters, who persecute me, as a creature and member of your worship, and, I warrant, have put that filthiness

filthiness there, to stir your patience to wrath against me, and provoke you to bang my sides as you used to do. But truly this bout they have missed their aim ; for I trust to the candid judgment of my master, who will consider, that I have neither curds, nor cream, nor any thing like it ; and that, if I had, I should sooner have put them into my stomach, than into your honour's helmet. It may be so, quoth *Don Quixote*. All this the gentleman saw, and saw with admiration, especially when *Don Quixote*, after having wiped his head, face, beard, and helmet, clapping it on, and fixing himself firm in his stirrups, then trying the easy drawing of his sword, and grasping his lance, said : Now come what will ; for here am I resolved to encounter Satan himself in person.

By this time the carr with the flags was come up, and no body with it but the carter upon one of the mules, and a man sitting upon the fore-part. *Don Quixote* planted himself just before them, and said : Whither go ye, brethren ? what carr is this ? what have you in it ? and what banners are those ? To which the carter answered : the carr is mine, and in it are two fierce lions, which the general of *Oran* is sending to court as a present to his majesty : the flags belong to our liege the king, to shew that what is in the carr is his. And are the lions large ? demanded *Don Quixote*. So large, replied the man upon the fore-part of the carr, that larger never came from *Afric* into *Spain* : I am their keeper, and have had charge of several, but never of any so large as these : they are a male and a female ; the male is in the first cage, and the female in that behind : at present they are hungry, not having eaten to-day, and therefore, Sir, get out of the way ; for we must make haste to the place where we are to feed them. At which *Don Quixote*, smiling a little, said : To me your lion-whelps ! your lion-whelps to me ! and at this time of day ! By the living god, those, who sent them hither, shall see whether I am a man to be scared by lions. Alight, honest friend, and, since you are their keeper, open the cages, and turn out those beasts ; for in the midst of
this

this field will I make them know who *Don Quixote de la Mancha* is, in spite of the enchanters that sent them to me. Very well, quoth the gentleman to himself, our good knight has given us a specimen of what he is: doubtless, the curds have softened his skull, and ripened his brains. Then *Sancho* came to him, and said: For god's sake, Sir, order it so, that my lord *Don Quixote* may not encounter these lions; for if he does they will tear us all to pieces. What then, is your master really so mad, answered the gentleman, that you fear and believe he will attack such fierce animals? He is not mad, answered *Sancho*, but daring. I will make him desist, replied the gentleman, and going to *Don Quixote*, who was hastening the keeper to open the cages, he said: Sir, knights-errant should undertake adventures, which promise good success, and not such as are quite desperate; for the valour, which borders too near upon the confines of rashness, has in it more of madness, than fortitude: besides, these lions do not come to assail your worship, nor do they so much as dream of any such thing: they are going to be presented to his majesty; and it is not proper to detain them, or hinder their journey. Sweet Sir, answered *Don Quixote*, go hence, and mind your decoy partridge and your stout ferret, and leave every one to his own business. This is mine, and I know whether these gentlemen lions come against me, or no. And, turning to the keeper, he said: I vow to god, Don rascal, if you do not instantly open the cages, with this lance will I pin you to the carr. The carter, who saw the resolution of this armed apparition, said: Good Sir, for charity's sake, be pleased to let me take off my mules, and get with them out of danger, before the lions are unsheathed; for should my cattle be killed, I am undone for all the days of my life, having no other livelihood but this carr and these mules. O man of little faith! answered *Don Quixote*, alight and unyoke, and do what you will; for you shall quickly see you have laboured in vain, and might have saved yourself this trouble. The carter alighted, and unyoked in great haste; and the keeper said aloud: Bear witness,

ness, all here present, that, against my will, and by compulsion, I open the cages, and loose the lions; and that I enter my protest against this gentleman, that all the harm and mischief these beasts do shall stand and be placed to his account, with my salary and perquisites over and above: pray, gentlemen, shift for your selves before I open; for, as to my self, I am sure they will do me no hurt. Again the gentleman pressed *Don Quixote* to desist from doing so mad a thing, it being to tempt god, to undertake so extravagant an action. *Don Quixote* replied, that he knew what he did. The gentleman rejoined, bidding him consider well of it, for he was certain he deceived himself. Nay, Sir, replied *Don Quixote*, if you do not care to be a spectator of what you think will prove a tragedy, spur your *Flea-bitten*, and save your self. *Sancho*, hearing this, besought him with tears in his eyes to desist from that enterprize, in comparison whereof that of the wind-mills, and that fearful one of the fulling-mill hammers, in short, all the exploits he had performed in the whole course of his life, were mere tarts and cheese-cakes. Consider, Sir, quoth *Sancho*, that here is no enchantment, nor any thing like it: for I have seen, through the grates and chinks of the cage, the claw of a true lion; and I guess by it, that the lion, to whom such a claw belongs, is bigger than a mountain. However it be, answered *Don Quixote*, fear will make it appear to you bigger than half the world. Retire, *Sancho*, and leave me; and if I die here, you know our old agreement: repair to *Dulcinea*; I say no more. To these he added other expressions, with which he cut off all hope of his desisting from his extravagant design. He in green would fain have opposed him, but found himself unequally matched in weapons and armour, and did not think it prudent to engage with a mad-man; for such, by this time, he took *Don Quixote* to be in all points: who hastening the keeper, and reiterating his menaces, the gentleman took occasion to clap spurs to his mare, *Sancho* to *Dapple*, and the carter to his mules, all endeavouring

deavouring to get as far from the carr as they could, before the lions were let loose. *Sancho* lamented the death of his master, verily believing it would now overtake him in the paws of the lions: he cursed his hard fortune, and the unlucky hour when it came into his head to serve him again: but, for all his tears and lamentations, he ceased not punching his *Dapple*, to get far enough from the carr. The keeper, seeing that the fugitives were got a good way off, repeated his arguments and entreaties to *Don Quixote*, who answered, that he heard him, and that he should trouble himself with no more arguments nor entreaties, for all would signify nothing, and that he must make haste.

Whilst the keeper delayed opening the first grate, *Don Quixote* considered with himself whether it would be best to fight on foot or on horse-back: at last he determined to fight on foot, lest *Rozinante* should be terrified at sight of the lions. Thereupon he leaped from his horse, flung aside his lance, braced on his shield, and drew his sword; and marching slowly, with marvellous intrepidity and an undaunted heart, he planted himself before the carr, devoutly commending himself, first to god, and then to his mistress *Dulcinea*.

Here it is to be noted, that the author of this faithful history, coming to this passage, falls into exclamations, and cries out: O strenuous, and beyond all expression courageous, *Don Quixote de la Mancha*; thou mirror, wherein all the valiant ones of the world may behold themselves, thou second and new *Don Manuel de Leon*, who was the glory and honour of the *Spanish* knights! With what words shall I relate this tremendous exploit? By what arguments shall I render it credible to succeeding ages? Or what praises, though above all hyperboles hyperbolical, do not fit and become thee? Thou alone on foot, intrepid and magnanimous, with a single sword, and that none of the sharpest, with a shield, not of the brightest and most shining steel, standest waiting for and expecting two of the fiercest lions, that ever were bred in the forests of
Africa.

Africa. Let thy own deeds praise thee, valorous *Manchegan*! for here I must leave off for want of words, whereby to enhance them. Here the author ends his exclamation, and resumes the thread of the history, saying.

The keeper then, seeing *Don Quixote* fixed in his posture, and that he could not avoid letting loose the male-lion, on pain of falling under the displeasure of the angry and daring knight, set wide open the door of the first cage, where lay the lion, which appeared to be of an extraordinary bigness, and of a hideous and frightful aspect. The first thing he did, was, to turn himself round in the cage, reach out a paw, and stretch himself at full length. Then he gaped and yawned very leisurely; then licked the dust off his eyes, and washed his face, with some half a yard of tongue. This done, he thrust his head out of the cage, and stared round on all sides with eyes of fire-coals: a sight and aspect enough to have struck terror into temerity itself. *Don Quixote* only observed him with attention, wishing he would leap out from the carr, and grapple with him, that he might tear him in pieces: to such a pitch of extravagance had his unheard-of madness transported him. But the generous lion, more civil than arrogant, taking no notice of his vapouring and bravadoes, after having stared about him, as has been said, turned his back, and shewed his posteriors to *Don Quixote*, and, with great slegm and calmness, laid himself down again in the cage. Which *Don Quixote* perceiving, he ordered the keeper to give him some blows, and provoke him to come forth. That I will not do, answered the keeper; for, should I provoke him, I myself shall be the first he will tear in pieces. Be satisfied, Signor cavalier, with what is done, which is all that can be said in point of courage, and do not tempt fortune a second time. The lion has the door open, and it is in his choice to come forth or not: and since he has not yet come out, he will not come out all this day. The greatness of your worship's courage is already sufficiently shewn: no brave combatant, as I take it, is obliged to more than

to

ous
of
or
he

his
he
of
or
ed
nd
rn
ch
ed
nd
e.
nd
a
e-
th
r,
s:
of
e
g.
as
rs.
s,
nn
m
at
o-
n
is
n-
e
e
e
r
o
n
o





J. Vanderbank inv.

T. Chambers Sculp.

to challenge his foe, and expect him in the field ; and, if the antagonist does not meet him, the infamy lies at his door, and the expectant gains the crown of conquest. That is true, answered *Don Quixote* : shut the door, friend, and give me a certificate, in the best form you can, of what you have seen me do here. It is fit it should be known, how you opened to the lion ; I waited for him ; he came not out ; I waited for him again ; again he came not out ; and again he laid him down. I am bound to no more ; enchantments avaunt, and god help right and truth and true chivalry : and so shut the door, while I make a signal to the fugitive and absent, that they may have an account of this exploit from your mouth.

The keeper did so, and *Don Quixote*, clapping on the point of his lance the linen cloth, wherewith he had wiped the torrent of the curds from off his face, began to call out to the rest, who still fled, turning about their heads at every step, all in a troop, and the gentleman at the head of them. But *Sancho*, chancing to espy the signal of the white cloth, said : May I be hanged if my master has not vanquished the wild-beasts, since he calls to us. They all halted, and knew that it was *Don Quixote*, who made the sign ; and, abating some part of their fear, they drew nearer by degrees, 'till they came where they could distinctly hear the words of *Don Quixote*, who was calling to them. I short, they came back to the carr, and then *Don Quixote* said to the carter : Put to your mules again, brother, and continue your journey ; and, *Sancho*, give two gold crowns to him and the keeper, to make them amends for my having detained them. That I will with all my heart, answered *Sancho* : but what is become of the lions ? Are they dead or alive ? Then the keeper, very minutely, and with proper pauses, related the success of the conflict, exaggerating, the best he could, or knew how, the valour of *Don Quixote*, at sight of whom the abashed lion would not, or durst not, stir out of the cage, though he had held open the door a good while ; and upon his re-
presenting

presenting to the knight, that it was tempting god to provoke the lion, and to make him come out by force, as he would have had him done, whether he would or no, and wholly against his will, he had suffered the cage-door to be shut. What think you of this, *Sancho*? quoth *Don Quixote*: can any enchantments prevail against true courage? With ease may the enchanters deprive me of good fortune; but of courage and resolution they never can. *Sancho* gave the gold crowns; the carter put to; the keeper kissed *Don Quixote's* hands for the favour received, and promised him to relate this valorous exploit to the king himself, when he came to court. If, perchance, his majesty, said *Don Quixote*, should enquire who performed it, tell him, *the knight of the lions*: for from henceforward I resolve, that the title I have hitherto borne of *the knight of the sorrowful figure* shall be changed, trucked, and altered to this; and herein I follow the antient practice of knights-errant, who changed their names when they had a mind, or whenever it served their turn.

The carr went on its way, and *Don Quixote*, *Sancho*, and he in the green furtout, pursued their journey. In all this time *Don Diego de Miranda* had not spoken a word, being all attention to observe and remark the actions and words of *Don Quixote*, taking him to be a sensible madman, and a madman bordering upon good sense. The first part of his history had not yet come to his knowledge; for, had he read that, his wonder at *Don Quixote's* words and actions would have ceased, as knowing the nature of his madness: but, as he yet knew nothing of it, he sometimes thought him in his senses, and sometimes out of them; because what he spoke was coherent, elegant, and well said, and what he did was extravagant, rash, and foolish: for, said he to himself, what greater madness can there be, than to clap on a helmet full of curds, and persuade one's self that enchanters have melted one's skull; and what greater rashness and extravagance, than to resolve, in spite of opposition, to fight with lions?

Don Quixote diverted these imaginations, and this soliloquy, by saying: Doubtless, Signor *Don Diego de*
Mi-

Miranda, in your opinion I must needs pass for an extravagant madman; and no wonder it should be so: for my actions indicate no less. But, for all that, I would have you know, that I am not so mad, nor so shallow, as I may have appeared to be. A fine appearance makes the gallant cavalier, in shining armour, prauncing over the lists, at some joyful tournament, in sight of the ladies. A fine appearance makes the knight, when, in the midst of a large square, before the eyes of his prince, he transfixes a furious bull. And a fine appearance make those knights, who, in military exercises, or the like, entertain, enliven, and, if we may so say, do honour to their prince's court. But, above all these, a much finer appearance makes the knight-errant, who, through deserts and solitudes, through cross-ways, through woods, and over mountains, goes in quest of perilous adventures, with design to bring them to a happy and fortunate conclusion, only to obtain a glorious and immortal fame. A knight-errant, I say, makes a finer appearance in the act of succouring some widow in a desert place, than a knight-courtier in addressing some damsel in a city. All cavaliers have their proper and peculiar exercises. Let the courtier wait upon the ladies; adorn his prince's court with rich liveries; entertain the poorer cavaliers at his splendid table; order jousts; manage tournaments; and shew himself great, liberal, and magnificent, and above all a good christian: and in this manner will he precisely comply with the obligations of his duty. But let the knight-errant search the remotest corners of the world; enter the most intricate labyrinths; at every step assail impossibilities; in the wild uncultivated deserts brave the burning rays of the summer's sun, and the keen inclemency of the winter's frost: Let not lions daunt him, spectres affright him, or dragons terrify him: for in seeking these, encountering those, and conquering them all, consists his principal and true employment. It being then my lot to be one of the number of knights-errant, I cannot decline undertaking whatever I imagine to come within the verge of my profession; and therefore encountering the lions, as

I just

I just now did, belonged to me directly, though I knew it to be a most extravagant rashness. I very well know, that fortitude is a virtue placed between the two vitious extremes of cowardise and rashness: but it is better the valiant should rise to the high pitch of temerity, than sink to the low point of cowardise: for, as it is easier for the prodigal to become liberal, than for the covetous, so it is much easier for the rash to hit upon being truly valiant, than for the coward to rise to true valour: and as to undertaking adventures, believe me, Signor *Don Diego*, it is better to lose the game by a card too much than one too little: for it sounds better in the ears of those that hear it, such a knight is rash and daring, than, such a knight is timorous and cowardly.

I say, Signor *Don Quixote*, answered *Don Diego*, that all you have said and done is levelled by the line of right reason; and I think, if the laws and ordinances of knight-errantry should be lost, they might be found in your worship's breast, as in their proper depository and register. But let us make haste, for it grows late; and let us get to my village and house, where you may repose and refresh your self after your late toil, which, if not of the body, has been a labour of the mind, which often affects the body too. I accept of the offer as a great favour and kindness, Signor *Don Diego*, answered *Don Quixote*: and spurring on a little more than they had hitherto done, it was about two in the afternoon when they arrived at the village, and the house of *Don Diego*, whom *Don Quixote* called *The knight of the green riding-coat*.

THE
LIFE and EXPLOITS
Of the ingenious GENTLEMAN
DON QUIXOTE
DE LA MANCHA.

BOOK II.

CHAPTER I.

Of what befel Don Quixote in the castle or house of the knight of the green riding-coat, with other extravagant matters.

DON QUIXOTE found, that *Don Diego's* house was spacious, after the country fashion, having the arms of the family carved in rough stone over the great gates; the buttery in the courtyard, the cellar under the porch, and several earthen wine-jars placed round about it; which, being of the ware of *Toboso*, renewed the memory of his enchanted and metamorphosed *Dulcinea*; and, without considering what he said, or before whom, he sighed, and cried: O sweetest pledges, found now to my sorrow; sweet and joyous, when heaven would have it so¹! O ye *Tobosian* jars, that have brought back to my remembrance the sweet pledge of my greatest bitterness!

¹ In allusion to the beginning of a song in the *Diana* of *Monte Mayor*.

This was over-heard by the poetical scholar, *Don Diego's* son, who, with his mother, was come out to receive him; and both mother and son were in admiration at the strange figure of *Don Quixote*, who, alighting from *Rozinante*, very courteously desired leave to kiss the lady's hands; and *Don Diego* said: Receive, madam, with your accustomed civility, Signor *Don Quixote de la Mancha* here present, a knight-errant, and the most valiant, and most ingenious, person in the world. The lady, whose name was *Donna Christina*, received him with tokens of much affection and civility, and *Don Quixote* returned them with interest in discreet and courteous expressions. The same kind of compliments passed between him and the student, whom by his talk *Don Quixote* took for a witty and acute person.

Here the author sets down all the particulars of *Don Diego's* house, describing all the furniture usually contained in the mansion of a gentleman that was both a farmer and rich. But the translators of the history thought fit to pass over in silence these, and such like minute matters, as not suiting with the principal scope of the history, in which truth has more force than cold and insipid digressions.

Don Quixote was led into a hall: *Sancho* unarmed him; he remained in his wide *Wagoon* breeches, and in a *Shamois* doublet, all besmeared with the rust of his armour: his band was of the college-cut, without starch and without lace: his buskins were date-coloured, and his shoes waxed. He girt on his trusty sword, which hung at a belt made of a sea-wolf's skin: for it is thought he had been many years troubled with a weakness in his loins¹. Over these he had a long cloak of good grey cloth. But, first of all, with five or six kettles of water (for there is some difference as to the number) he washed his head and face; and still the water continued of a whey-colour, thanks to *Sancho's* gluttony, and the purchase of the nasty curds, that had made his master so white and clean. With the aforesaid accoutrements, and with a genteel

1 An old woman's remedy for that ailment.

genteel air and deportment, *Don Quixote* walked into another hall, where the student was waiting to entertain him 'till the cloth was laid; for the lady *Donna Christina* would shew, upon the arrival of so noble a guest, that she knew how to regale those, who came to her house.

While *Don Quixote* was unarming, *Don Lorenzo* (for that was the name of *Don Diego's* son) had leisure to say to his father: Pray, Sir, who is this gentleman you have brought us home? for his name, his figure, and your telling us he is a knight-errant, hold my mother and me in great suspense. I know not how to answer you, son, replied *Don Diego*: I can only tell you, that I have seen him act the part of the maddest man in the world, and then talk so ingeniously, that his words contradict and undo all his actions. Talk you to him, and feel the pulse of his understanding; and, since you have discernment enough, judge of his discretion, or distraction, as you shall find; though, to say the truth, I rather take him to be mad, than otherwise.

Hereupon *Don Lorenzo* went to entertain *Don Quixote*, as has been said; and among other discourse, which passed between them, *Don Quixote* said to *Don Lorenzo*: Signor *Don Diego de Miranda*, your father, Sir, has given me some account of your rare abilities, and refined judgment, and particularly that you are a great poet. A poet, perhaps, I may be, replied *Don Lorenzo*; but a great one, not even in thought. True it is, I am somewhat fond of poetry, and of reading the good poets; but in no wise so as to merit the title my father is pleased to bestow upon me. I do not dislike this modesty, answered *Don Quixote*; for poets are usually very arrogant, each thinking himself the greatest in the world. There is no rule without an exception, answered *Don Lorenzo*, and such an one there may be, who is really so, and does not think it. Very few, answered *Don Quixote*: but please to tell me, Sir, what verses are those you have now in hand, which, your father says, make you so uneasy and

thoughtful: for if it be some gloss ¹, I know somewhat of the knack of glossing, and should be glad to see it: and if they are designed for a poetical prize, endeavour to obtain the second; for the first is always carried by favour, or by the great quality of the person: the second is bestowed according to merit; so that the third becomes the second, and the first, in this account, is but the third, according to the liberty commonly taken in your universities. But, for all that, the name of first makes a great figure. Hitherto, said *Don Lorenzo* to himself, I cannot judge thee to be mad: let us proceed; so he said to him: Your worship, I presume, has frequented the schools: what sciences have you studied? That of knight-errantry, answered *Don Quixote*, which is as good as your poetry, yea, and two little fingers breadth beyond it. I know not what science that is, replied *Don Lorenzo*, and hitherto it has not come to my knowledge. It is a science, replied *Don Quixote*, which includes in it all, or most of the other sciences of the world. For he, who professes it, must be a lawyer, and know the laws of distributive and commutative justice, in order to give every one what is his own, and that which is proper for him. He must be a divine, to be able to give a reason for the christian faith he professes, clearly and distinctly, whenever it is required of him. He must be a physician, and especially a botanist, to know, in the midst of wildernesses and deserts, the herbs and simples, which have the virtue of curing wounds; for your knight-errant must not at every turn be running to look for somebody to heal him. He must be an astronomer, to know by the stars what it is a clock, and what part or climate of the world he is in. He must know the mathematics, because at every foot he will stand in need of them: and, setting aside that he must be adorned with all the cardinal and theological virtues, I descend to some other minute particulars. I say then, he must know how to swim like him people call *Fish-Nicholas*,

or

¹ A kind of paraphrase or comment, much in use in that age.

or *Nicholao* ¹. He must know how to shoe a horse, and to keep the saddle and bridle in repair: and, to return to what was said above, he must preserve his faith to god and his mistress inviolate. He must be chaste in his thoughts, modest in his words, liberal in good works, valiant in exploits, patient in toils, charitable to the needy, and lastly a maintainer of the truth, though it should cost him his life to defend it. Of all these great and small parts a good knight-errant is composed. Consider then, Signor *Don Lorenzo*, whether it be a snotty science, which the knight, who professes it, learns and studies, and whether it may not be equalled to the stateliest of all those that are taught in your colleges and schools. If this be so, replied *Don Lorenzo*, I maintain, that this science is preferable to all others. How! if it be so! answered *Don Quixote*. What I mean, Sir, quoth *Don Lorenzo*, is, that I question, whether there ever have been, or now are in being, any knights-errant, adorned with so many virtues. I have often said, answered *Don Quixote*, what I now repeat, that the greatest part of the world are of opinion, there never were any knights-errant; and, because I am of opinion, that, if heaven does not in some miraculous manner convince them of the truth, that there have been, and are such now, whatever pains are taken will be all in vain, as I have often found by experience, I will not now lose time in bringing you out of an error so prevalent with many. What I intend, is, to beg of heaven to undeceive you, and let you see how useful and necessary knights-errant were in times past, and how beneficial they would be in the present, were they again in fashion: but now, through the sins of the people, sloth, idleness, gluttony, and luxury triumph. Our guest has broke loose, quoth *Don Lorenzo* to himself; but still he is a whimsical kind of a madman, and I should be a weak fool, if I did not believe so.

Here their discourse ended; for they were called to supper. *Don Diego* asked his son, what he had copied out fair of the genius of his guest. He answered:

I 3

The

¹ Alluding to a fabulous story in the *Theatre of the gods*.

The ablest doctors, and best pen-men in the world, will never be able to extricate him out of the rough-draught of his madness ¹. His distraction is a medley, full of lucid intervals. To supper they went, and the repast was such, as *Don Diego* had told them upon the road, he used to give to those he invited, neat, plentiful, and savoury. But that, which pleased *Don Quixote* above all, was, the marvellous silence throughout the whole house, as if it had been a convent of *Carthusians*.

The cloth being taken away, grace said, and their hands washed, *Don Quixote* earnestly entreated *Don Lorenzo* to repeat the verses designed for the prize. To which he answered: That I may not be like those poets, who, when desired, refuse to repeat their verses, and, when not asked, spew them out, I will read my glosses, for which I expect no prize, having done it only to exercise my fancy. A friend of mine, a very ingenious person, answered *Don Quixote*, was of opinion, that no body should give themselves the trouble of glossing on verses: and the reason, he said, was, because the gloss could never come up to the text, and very often the gloss mistakes the intention and design of the author. Besides, the rules of glossing are too strict, suffering no interrogations, nor *said he's*, nor *shall I say's*, nor making nouns of verbs, nor changing the sense, with other ties and restrictions, which cramp the glossers, as your worship must needs know. Truly, Signor *Don Quixote*, quoth *Don Lorenzo*, I have a great desire to catch your worship tripping in some false *Latin*, and cannot; for you slip through my fingers like an eel. I do not understand, answered *Don Quixote*, what you mean by my slipping through your fingers. I will let you know another time, replied *Don Lorenzo*: at present give attention to the text and the gloss, which are as follows.

The

¹ The son's answer carries on the metaphor used in the father's question.

The T E X T.

*Could I the joyous moments past
Recall, and say, what was now is,
Or to succeeding moments haste,
And now enjoy the future bliss.*

The G L O S S.

*As all things fleet and die away,
And day at length is lost in night,
My blessings wou'd no longer stay,
But took their everlasting flight.
O Fortune, at thy feet I lie,
To supplicate thy deity:
Inconstant goddess, frown no more;
Make me but happy now at last:
No more I'd curse thy fickle power,
Cou'd I recall the moments past.*

*No other conquest I implore,
No other palm my brow to grace:
Content ('tis all I ask) restore,
And give me back my mind's lost peace.
Past joys enhance the present pain,
And sad remembrance is our bane.
O wou'd at length relenting Fate
Restore the ravish'd hours of bliss,
How should I hug the charming state,
And joyful say, what was now is!*

*Thy empty wish, fond wretch, give o'er,
Nor ask so vain, so wild a thing;
Revolving Time no mortal pow'r
Can stop, or stay his fleeting wing.
Nimble as thought, he runs, he flies:
The present hour for ever dies.
In vain we ask futurity;
In vain we wou'd recall the past:
We cannot from the present fly,
Nor to succeeding moments haste.*

*Vex'd with alternate hopes and fears,
 I feel variety of pain :
 But death can ease a wretch's cares,
 And surely death to me is gain.
 Again my erring judgment strays
 From sober reason's juster ways :
 Convinc'd by her unerring voice,
 Another life must follow this,
 I make the present woes my choice,
 Rather than forfeit future blifs.*

When *Don Lorenzo* had made an end of reading his glos, *Don Quixote* stood up, and, holding *Don Lorenzo* fast by the right hand, cried out, in a voice so loud, that it was next to a squall : By the highest heavens, noble youth, you are the best poet in the universe, and deserve to wear the laurel, not of *Cyprus*, nor of *Gaëta*, as a certain poet said, whom god forgive, but of the universities of *Athens*, were they now in being, and of those that now subsist, of *Paris*, *Bologna*, and *Salamanca*. Heaven grant, that the judges, who shall deprive you of the first prize, may be transfixed by the arrows of *Apollo*, and that the *Muses* may never cross the threshold of their doors. Be pleased, Sir, to repeat some other of your verses, in the greater kinds of poetry ; for I would thoroughly feel the pulse of your admirable genius. Is it not excellent, that *Don Lorenzo* should be delighted to hear himself praised by *Don Quixote*, whom he deemed a madman ? O force of flattery, how far doest thou extend, and how wide are the bounds of thy pleasing jurisdiction ! This truth was verified in *Don Lorenzo*, who complied with the request and desire of *Don Quixote*, repeating this sonnet on the fable or story of *Pyramus* and *Thisbe*.

S O N N E T.

*The nymph, who Pyramus with love inspir'd,
 Pierces the wall, with equal passion fir'd :
 Cupid from distant Cyprus thither flies,
 And views the secret breach with laughing eyes.*

Here

*Here silence vocal mutual vows conveys,
And whispering eloquent their love betrays.
Tho' chain'd by fear their voices dare not pass,
Their souls transmitted through the chink embrace.*

*Ah woeful story of disastrous love!
Ill-fated haste that did their ruin prove!
One death, one grave unites the faithful pair,
And in one common fame their mem'ries share.*

Now god be thanked, quoth *Don Quixote*, having heard *Don Lorenzo's* sonnet, that, among the infinite number of poets now in being, I have met with one so absolute in all respects, as the artifice of your worship's sonnet shews you to be.

Four days was *Don Quixote* extremely regaled in *Don Diego's* house; at the end whereof he begged leave to be gone, telling him, he thanked him for the favour and kind entertainment he had received in his family: but, because it did not look well for knights-errant to give themselves up to idleness and indulgence too long, he would go, in compliance with the duty of his function, in quest of adventures, wherewith he was informed those parts abounded; designing to employ the time thereabouts, 'till the day of the jousts at *Saragossa*, at which he resolved to be present: but in the first place he intended to visit the cave of *Montesinos*, of which people related so many and such wonderful things all over that country; at the same time enquiring into the source and true springs of the seven lakes, commonly called the lakes of *Ruydera*. *Don Diego* and his son applauded his honourable resolution, desiring him to furnish himself with whatever he pleased of theirs; for he was heartily welcome to it, his worthy person and his noble profession obliging them to make him this offer.

At length the day of his departure came, as joyous to *Don Quixote*, as sad and unhappy for *Sancho Pança*, who liked the plenty of *Don Diego's* house wondrous well, and was loth to return to the hunger of the forests and wildernesses, and to the penury of his

ill-provided wallets. However he filled and stuffed them with what he thought most necessary : and *Don Quixote*, at taking leave of *Don Lorenzo*, said : I know not whether I have told you before, and, if I have, I tell you again, that, whenever you shall have a mind to shorten your way and pains to arrive at the inaccessible summit of the temple of Fame, you have no more to do, but to leave on one side the path of poetry, which is somewhat narrow, and follow that of knight-errantry, which is still narrower, but sufficient to make you an emperor before you can say, *Give me these straws*. With these expressions *Don Quixote* did, as it were, finish and shut up the process of his madness, and especially with what he added, saying : God knows how willingly I would take Signor *Don Lorenzo* with me, to teach him how to spare the humble, and to trample under-foot the haughty¹, virtues annexed to the function I profess : but since his youth does not require it, nor his laudable exercises permit it, I content my self with putting your worship in the way of becoming a famous poet ; and that is, by following the opinion and judgment of other men rather than your own ; for no fathers or mothers think their own children ugly ; and this self-deceit is yet stronger with respect to the off-spring of the mind. The father and son admired afresh at the intermixed discourses of *Don Quixote*, sometimes wise and sometimes wild, and the obstinacy, with which he was bent upon the search of his misadventurous adventures, the sole end and aim of all his wishes. Offers of service and civilities were repeated, and, with the good leave of the lady of the castle, they departed, *Don Quixote* upon *Rozinante*, and *Sancho* upon *Dapple*.

C H A P.

¹ *Parcere subjectis, & debellare superbos. Virg. Æn. 6.*

C H A P. II.

Wherein is related the adventure of the enamoured shepherd, with other truly pleasant accidents.

DON QUIXOTE was got but a little way from *Don Diego's* village, when he over-took two persons like ecclesiastics or scholars, and two country fellows, all four mounted upon asses. One of the scholars carried behind him, wrapped up in green buckram like a portmanteau, a small bundle of linen, and two pair of thread-sockings: the other carried nothing but a pair of new black fencing foils, with their buttons. The countrymen carried other things, which shewed that they came from some great town, where they had bought them, and were carrying them home to their own village. Both the scholars and countrymen fell into the same admiration, that all others did at the first sight of *Don Quixote*, and eagerly desired to know what man this was, so different in appearance from other men. *Don Quixote* saluted them, and, after learning that the road they were going was the same he was taking, he offered to bear them company, desiring them to slacken their pace, for their asses out-went his horse: and, to prevail upon them, he briefly told them who he was, and his employment and profession, that of a knight-errant, going in quest of adventures through all parts of the world. He told them, his proper name was *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, and his appellative *the knight of the lions*. All this to the countrymen was talking greek or gibberish; but not to the scholars, who soon discovered the soft part of *Don Quixote's* scull: nevertheless they looked upon him with admiration and respect, and one of them said: If your worship, Sir knight, be not determined to one particular road, a thing not usual with seekers of adventures, come along with us, and you will see one of the greatest and richest weddings that to this day has ever been celebrated in *La Mancha*, or in many leagues round about. *Don Quixote*

ete asked him, if it was that of some prince, that he extolled it so much? No, answered the scholar, but of a farmer and a farmer's daughter; he the wealthiest of all this country, and she the beautifullest that ever eyes beheld. The preparation is extraordinary and new; for the wedding is to be celebrated in a meadow near the village, where the bride lives, whom they call, by way of pre-eminence, *Quiteria* the fair, and the bridegroom *Camacho* the rich; she of the age of eighteen, and he of two and twenty, both equally matched; though some nice folks, who have all the pedigrees in the world in their heads, pretend, that the family of *Quiteria* the fair has the advantage of *Camacho's*: but now a days that is little regarded; for riches are able to solder up abundance of flaws. In short, this same *Camacho* is generous, and has taken into his head to make a kind of arbour to cover the whole meadow over-head, in such manner that the sun itself will be put to some difficulty to get to visit the green grass, with which the ground is covered. He will also have morice-dancers, both with swords and little bells; for there are some people in his village, who jingle and clatter them extremely well. I say nothing of the shoe-dancers and caperers¹, so great is the number that are invited. But nothing of all that I have repeated, or omitted, is like to make this wedding so remarkable, as what, I believe, the slighted *Basilus* will do upon this occasion.

This *Basilus* is a neighbouring swain, of the same village with *Quiteria*: his house is next to that of *Quiteria's* parents, with nothing but a wall between them; from whence *Cupid* took occasion to revive in the world the long-forgotten loves of *Pyramus* and *Thisbe*: for *Basilus* was in love with *Quiteria* from his childhood, and she answered his wishes with a thousand modest favours, insomuch that the loves of the two children, *Basilus* and *Quiteria*, became the common talk of the village. When they were grown up, the father of *Quiteria* resolved to forbid *Basilus* the usual

¹ *Zapateadores*. Dancers that strike the soles of their shoes with the palms of their hands in time and measure.

usual access to his family, and, to save himself from apprehensions and suspicions, he purposed to marry his daughter to the rich *Camacho*, not choosing to match her with *Basilus*, who is not endowed with so many gifts of fortune, as of nature: for, if the truth is to be told without envy, he is the most active youth we know; a great pitcher of the bar, an extreme good wrestler, and a great player at cricket; runs like a buck, leaps like a wild goat, and plays at nine-pins as if he did it by witchcraft; sings like a lark, and touches a guitar that he makes it speak; and, above all, he handles the small sword like the most accomplished fencer. For this excellence alone, quoth *Don Quixote* immediately, this youth deserves to marry, not only the fair *Quiteria*, but queen *Ginebra* herself, were she now alive, in spite of Sir *Lancelot*, and all opposers. To my wife with that, quoth *Sancho Pança* (who had been hitherto silent and listening) who will have every body marry their equal, according to the proverb, Every sheep to its match. What I would have, is, that this honest *Basilus* (for I begin to take a liking to him) shall marry this same lady *Quiteria*; and heaven send them good luck, and god's blessing (he meant the reverse) on those, who would hinder people that love each other from marrying. If all, who love each other, were to be married, said *Don Quixote*, it would deprive parents of the privilege and authority of finding proper matches for their children. If the choice of husbands were left to the inclination of daughters, some there are, who would choose their father's servant, and others some pretty fellow they see pass along the streets, in their opinion, genteel, and well made, though he were a beaten bully; for love and affection easily blind the eyes of the understanding, so absolutely necessary for choosing our state of life; and that of matrimony is greatly exposed to the danger of a mistake, and there is need of great caution, and the particular favour of heaven, to make it hit right. A person, who has a mind to take a long journey, if he be wise, before he sets forward, will look out for some safe and agreeable companion. And
should

should not he do the like, who undertakes a journey for life, especially if his fellow traveller is to be his companion at bed and board, and every where else, as the wife is with the husband? The wife is not a commodity, which, when once bought, you can exchange, or swap, or return; but is an inseparable accessory, which lasts as long as life itself. She is a noose, which, when once thrown about the neck, turns to a *Gordian* knot, and cannot be unloosed 'till cut asunder by the scythe of death. I could say much more upon this subject, were I not prevented by the desire I have to know, whether Signor the licenciado has any thing more to say concerning the history of *Basilus*. To which the scholar, batchelor, or licenciado, as *Don Quixote* called him, answered: On the whole I have no more to say, but that, from the moment *Basilus* heard of *Quiteria's* being to be married to *Camacho the rich*, he has never been seen to smile, nor speak coherently, and is always pensive and sad, and talking to himself; certain and clear indications of his being distracted. He eats and sleeps but little; and what he does eat is fruit; and when he sleeps, if he does sleep, it is in the fields, upon the hard ground, like a brute beast. From time to time he throws his eyes up to heaven; now fixes them on the ground, with such stupefaction, that he seems to be nothing but a statue clothed, whose drapery is put in motion by the air. In short, he gives such indications of an impassioned heart, that we all take it for granted, that to-morrow *Quiteria's* pronouncing the fatal *Yes* will be the sentence of his death.

Heaven will order it better, quoth *Sancho*; for god, that gives the wound, sends the cure: no body knows what is to come: there are a great many hours between this and to-morrow; and in one hour, yea, in one moment, down falls the house: I have seen it rain, and the sun shine, both at the same time: such an one goes to bed sound at night, and is not able to stir next morning: and tell me, can any body brag of having driven a nail in *Fortune's* wheel? no certainly; and, between the *Yes* and the *No* of a woman, I
would

would not venture to thrust the point of a pin ; for there would not be room enough for it. Grant me but that *Quiteria* loves *Basilus* with all her heart, and I will give him a bag-full of good-fortune : for love, as I have heard say, looks through spectacles, which make copper appear to be gold, poverty to be riches, and specks in the eyes pearls. A curse light on you, *Sancho*, what would you be at ? quoth *Don Quixote* : when you begin stringing of proverbs and tales, none but *Judas*, who I wish had you, can wait for you. Tell me, animal, what know you of nails and wheels, or of any thing else ? O ! replied *Sancho*, if I am not understood, no wonder that what I say passes for nonsense : but no matter for that ; I understand myself ; neither have I said many foolish things : only your worship is always cricketting my words and actions. Criticking, I suppose, you would say, quoth *Don Quixote*, and not cricketting, thou misapplier of good language, whom god confound. Pray, Sir, be not so sharp upon me, answered *Sancho* ; for you know I was not bred at court, nor have studied in *Salamanca*, to know whether I add to, or take a letter from, my words. As god shall save me, it is unreasonable to expect, that the *Sayagues* ¹ should speak like the *Toledans* ; nay, there are *Toledans*, who are not over nice in the business of speaking politely. It is true, quoth the licenciado ; for how should they speak so well, who are bred in the tan-yards and in *Zocodover* ², as they, who are all day walking up and down the cloisters of the great church ? and yet they are all *Toledans*. Purity, propriety, elegance, and perspicuity of language, are to be found among discerning courtiers, though born in *Majalahonda*. I say discerning, because a great many there are, who are not so, and discernment is the grammar of good language, accompanied with custom and use. I, gentlemen, for my sins, have studied the canon law in *Salamanca*, and

pique

¹ The people about *Zamora*, the poorest in *Spain*.

² Some unpolite part of the city of *Toledo*, like our *Billingsgate* or *Wapping*.

pique myself a little upon expressing myself in clear, plain, and significant terms. If you had not piqued yourself more upon managing those unlucky foils you carry, than your tongue, said the other scholar, you might by this time have been at the head of your class; whereas now you are at the tail. Look you, bachelor, answered the licenciado, you are the most mistaken in the world in your opinion touching the dexterity of the sword, if you hold it to be insignificant. With me, it is not barely opinion, but a settled truth, replied *Corchuelo*; and if you have a mind I should convince you by experience, you carry foils, an opportunity offers, and I have nerves and strength, that, backed by my courage, which is none of the least, will make you confess that I am not deceived. Alight, and make use of your measured steps, your circles, and angles, and science; for I hope to make you see the stars at noon-day with my modern and rustic dexterity; in which I trust, under god, that the man is yet unborn, who shall make me turn my back, and that there is no body in the world, whom I will not oblige to give ground. As to turning the back or not, I meddle not with it, replied the adept, though it may happen that in the first spot you fix your foot on your grave may be opened; I mean, that you may be left dead there for despising the noble science of defence. We shall see that presently, answered *Corchuelo*, and, jumping hastily from his beast, he snatched one of the foils, which the licenciado carried upon his ass. It must not be so, cried *Don Quixote* at this instant; for I will be master of this fencing-bout, and judge of this long controverted question: and alighting from *Rozinante*, and grasping his lance, he planted himself in the middle of the road, just as the licenciado, with a graceful motion of body, and measured step, was making toward *Corchuelo*, who came at him, darting, as the phrase is, fire from his eyes. The two countrymen, without dismounting, served as spectators of the mortal tragedy. The slashes, thrusts, high strokes, back-strokes and fore-strokes, *Corchuelo* gave, were numberless, and thicker than hail. He

fell

fell on like a provoked lion ; but met with a smart tap on the mouth from the button of the licenciado's foil, which stopped him in the midst of his fury, making him kiss it, though not with so much devotion, as if it had been a relic. In short, the licenciado, by dint of clean thrusts, counted him all the buttons of a little cassock he had on, and tore the skirts, so that they hung in rags like the many-tailed fish ¹. Twice he struck off his hat, and so tired him, that, through despite, choler, and rage, he flung away the foil into the air with such force, that one of the country-fellows present, who was a kind of scrivener, and went to fetch it, said, and swore, it was thrown near three quarters of a league : which affidavit has served, and still serves, to shew and demonstrate, that skill goes farther than strength. *Corchuelo* sat down quite spent, and *Sancho* going to him said : In faith, master bachelor, if you would take my advice, henceforward you should challenge no body to fence, but to wrestle or pitch the bar, since you are old enough and strong enough for that : for I have heard say of these masters, that they can thrust the point of a sword through the eye of a needle. I am satisfied, answered *Corchuelo*, and have learned by experience a truth I could not otherwise have believed : and getting up he went and embraced the licenciado, and they were now better friends than before. So, being unwilling to wait for the scrivener, who was gone to fetch the foil, thinking he might stay too long, they determined to make the best of their way, that they might arrive betimes at *Quiteria's* village, whither they were all bound. By the way, the licenciado laid down to them the excellencies of the noble science of defence, with such self evident reasons, and so many mathematical figures and demonstrations, that every body was convinced of the usefulness of the science, and *Corchuelo* entirely brought over from his obstinacy.

It was just night-fall : but, before they arrived, they all thought they saw, between them and the village, a kind of heaven full of innumerable and resplendent stars. They heard also the confused and sweet sounds

of

¹ Pulpo.

of various instruments, as flutes, tambourins, psalters, cymbals, and little drums, with bells ; and, drawing near, they perceived the boughs of an arbour, made on one side of the entrance into the town, all hung with lights, which were not disturbed by the wind ; for all was so calm, there was not a breath of air so much as to stir the very leaves of the trees. The life and joy of the wedding were the musicians, who went up and down in bands through that delightful place, some dancing, others singing, and others playing upon the different instruments aforesaid. In short, it looked as if mirth and pleasure danced and revelled through the meadow. Several others were busied about raising scaffolds, from which they might commodiously be spectators next day of the plays and dances, that were to be performed in that place, dedicated to the solemnizing the nuptials of the rich *Camacho*, and the obsequies of *Basilus*. *Don Quixote* refused to go into the town, though both the countryman and the batchelor invited him : but he pleaded, as a sufficient excuse in his opinion, that it was the custom of knights-errant to sleep in the fields and forests, rather than in towns, though under gilded roofs : and therefore he turned a little out of the way, sorely against *Sancho's* will, who had not forgotten the good lodging he had met with in the castle or house of *Don Diego*.

C H A P. III.

Giving an account of the wedding of Camacho the rich, with the adventure of Basilus the poor.

SCARCE had the fair *Aurora* given bright *Phæbus* room, with the heat of his warm rays, to dry up the liquid pearls on his golden hair, when *Don Quixote*, shaking off sloth from his drowsy members, got upon his feet, and called to his squire *Sancho Pança*, who still lay snoring ; which *Don Quixote* perceiving, before he would awake him, said : O happy thou above all that live on the face of the earth, who, neither envying, nor being envied, sleepest on with tran-

tranquillity of soul ! neither do enchanters persecute, nor enchantments affright, thee. Sleep on, I say again, and will say a hundred times more, sleep on ; for no jealousies on thy lady's account keep thee in perpetual watchings, nor do anxious thoughts of paying debts awake thee, nor is thy rest broken with the thoughts of what thou must do to-morrow, to provide for thy self and thy little family. Ambition disquiets thee not, nor does the vain pomp of the world disturb thee ; for thy desires extend not beyond the limits of taking care of thy ass : for that of thy person is laid upon my shoulders, a counter-balance and burthen that nature and custom have laid upon masters. The servant sleeps, and the master is waking, to consider how he is to maintain, prefer, and do him kindnesses. The pain of seeing the obdurate heaven made, as it were, of brass, and refusing convenient dews to refresh the earth, afflicts not the servant, but the master, who is bound to provide, in times of sterility and famine, for him, who served him in times of fertility and abundance. To all this *Sancho* answered not a word ; for he was asleep, nor had awaked so soon as he did, but that *Don Quixote* jogged him with the but-end of his lance. At last he awaked, drowsy and yawning ; and, turning his face on all sides, he said : From yonder shady bower, if I mistake not, there comes a steam and smell, rather of broiled rashers of bacon, than of thyme or rushes : by my faith, weddings, that begin thus favourily, must needs be liberal and abundant. Have done, glutton, quoth *Don Quixote*, and let us go and see this wedding, and what becomes of the disdained *Basilus*. Marry, let what will become of him, answered *Sancho* : he can not be poor and marry *Quiteria* : a pleasant fancy, for one, not worth a groat, to aim at marrying above the clouds ! Faith, Sir, in my opinion, a poor man should be contented with what he finds, and not be looking for truffles at the bottom of the sea. I dare wager an arm, that *Camacho* can cover *Basilus* with six-penny pieces from head to foot : and if it be
so,

so, as it must needs be, *Quiteria* would be a pretty bride indeed, to reject the fine cloaths and jewels, that *Camacho* has given, and can give her, to choose instead of them a pitch of the bar, and a feint at foils, of *Basilus* ¹: One cannot have a pint of wine at a tavern for the bravest pitch of the bar, or the cleverest push of the foil: abilities and graces that are not vendible, let the Count *Dirlos* have them for me: but when they light on a man that has wherewithal, may my life shew as well as they do. Upon a good foundation a good building may be raised, and the best bottom and foundation in the world is money. For the love of god, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, have done with your harangue: I verily believe, were you let alone to go on as you begin at every turn, you would have no time to eat, or sleep, but would spend it all in talk. If your worship had a good memory, replied *Sancho*, you would remember the articles of our agreement, before we sallied from home this last time; one of which was, that you were to let me talk as much as I pleased, so it were not any thing against my neighbour, or against your worship's authority, and hitherto I think I have not broke that capitulation. I do not remember any such article, *Sancho*, answered *Don Quixote*; and though it were so, it is my pleasure you hold your peace, and come along; for by this time the musical instruments we heard last night begin again to cheer the vallies, and doubtless the espousals will be celebrated in the cool of the morning, and not put off 'till the heat of the day.

Sancho did as his lord commanded him; and saddling *Rozinante* and panneling *Dapple*, they both mounted, and marching softly entered the artificial shade. The first thing that presented itself to *Sancho's* sight, was a whole bullock spitted upon a large elm. The fire it was roasted by was composed of a middling mountain of wood, and round it were placed six pots,
not

¹ Before the savoury smell had debauched *Sancho's* judgment, his passion was strong for *Basilus*; but a lover of his guts will be partial for a meal's meat. Observe how he vilifies poor *Basilus*.

not cast in common moulds ; for they were half jars, each containing a whole shamble of flesh ; and entire sheep were sunk and swallowed up in them, as commodiously as if they were only so many pigeons. The hares ready cased, and the fowls ready plucked, that hung about upon the branches, in order to be buried in the cauldrons, were without number. Infinite was the wild fowl and venison hanging about the trees, that the air might cool them. *Sancho* counted above three-score skins, each of above twenty-four quarts, and all, as appeared afterwards, full of generous wines. There were also piles of the whitest bread, like so many heaps of wheat in a threshing-floor. Cheeses ranged like bricks formed a kind of wall. Two cauldrons of oil, larger than a dyer's vat, stood ready for frying all sorts of batter-ware ; and with a couple of stout peels they took them out when fried, and dipped them in another kettle of prepared honey, that stood by. The men and women cooks were above fifty, all clean, all diligent, and all in good humour. In the bullock's distended belly were a dozen sucking-pigs, sewed up in it to make it savoury and tender. The spices of various kinds seemed to have been bought, not by the pound, but by the hundred, and stood free for every body in a great chest. In short, the preparation for the wedding was all rustic, but in such plenty, that it was sufficient to have feasted an army.

Sancho beheld all, considered all, and was in love with every thing. The first that captivated and subdued his inclinations were the flesh-pots, out of which he would have been glad to have filled a moderate pipkin. Then the wine-skins drew his affections ; and, lastly, the products of the frying-pans, if such pompous cauldrons may be so called. And, not being able to forbear any longer, and having no power to do otherwise, he went up to one of the busy cooks, and, with courteous and hungry words, desired leave to sop a luncheon of bread in one of the pots. To which the cook answered : This is none of those days, over which hunger presides ; thanks to rich *Camacho* :
alight,

alight, and see if you can find a ladle any where, and skim out a fowl or two, and much good may they do you. I see none, answered *Sancho*. Stay, quoth the cook, god forgive me, what a nice and good-for-nothing fellow must you be! And so saying, he laid hold of a kettle, and, fowling it into one of the half jars, he fished out three pullets, and a couple of geese, and said to *Sancho*: Eat, friend, and make a breakfast of this scum, to stay your stomach 'till dinner-time. I have nothing to put it in, answered *Sancho*. Then take ladle and all, quoth the cook; for the riches and felicity of *Camacho* supply every thing.

While *Sancho* was thus employed, *Don Quixote* stood observing how, at one side of the spacious arbour, entered a dozen country-men upon as many beautiful mares, adorned with rich and gay caparisons, and their furniture hung round with little bells. They were clad in holy-day apparel, and in a regular troop ran sundry careers about the meadow, with a joyful moorish cry of, Long live *Camacho* and *Quiteria*, he as rich as she fair, and she the fairest of the world. Which *Don Quixote* hearing said to himself: It is plain these people have not seen my *Dulcinea del Toboso*; for, had they seen her, they would have been a little more upon the reserve in praising this *Quiteria* of theirs. A little while after, there entered, at divers parts of the arbour, a great many different dances; among which was one consisting of four and twenty sword-dancers, handsome, sprightly, swains, all arrayed in fine whited linen, with handkerchiefs wrought with several colours of fine silk. One of those upon the mares asked a youth, who led the sword-dance, whether any of his comrades were hurt. As yet, god be thanked, quoth the youth, no body is wounded; we are all whole: and presently he twined himself in among the rest of his companions, with

1 It was usual formerly in *Spain*, when they danced, especially with women, instead of taking hands, for each dancer to hold the corner of an handkerchief, and thus to dance in a circle, the handkerchief serving to link the performers together in a kind of chain.

so many turns, and so dextrously, that, though *Don Quixote* was accustomed to see such kind of dances, he never liked any so well as that. There was another, which pleased him mightily, of a dozen most beautiful damsels, so young, that none of them appeared to be under fourteen, nor any quite eighteen years old, all clad in green stuff of *Cuença*, their locks partly plaited and partly loose, and all so yellow, that they might rival those of the sun itself; with garlands of jessamine, roses, and woodbine upon their heads. They were led up by a venerable old man and an ancient matron, but more nimble and airy than could be expected from their years. A bag-pipe of *Zamora*¹ was their music; and they, carrying modesty in their looks and eyes, and lightness in their feet, approved themselves the best dancers in the world. After these, there entered an artificial dance, composed of eight nymphs, divided into two files. The god *Cupid* led one file, and *Interest* the other; the former adorned with wings, bow, quiver, and arrows; the other apparelled with rich and various colours of gold and silk. The nymphs, attendants on the god of love, had their names written at their backs on white parchment, and in capital letters. POETRY was the title of the first; DISCRETION of the second; GOOD-FAMILY of the third; and VALOUR of the fourth. The followers of *Interest* were distinguished in the same manner. The title of the first was LIBERALITY; DONATION of the second; TREASURE of the third; and that of the fourth PEACEABLE-POSSESSION. Before them all came a wooden castle, drawn by savages, clad in ivy and hemp dyed green, so to the life, that they almost frightened *Sancho*. On the front, and on all the four sides of the machine, was written, *The castle of Reserve*. Four skilful musicians played on the tabour and pipe. *Cupid* began the dance, and, after two movements, he lifted up his eyes, and bent his bow against a damsel that stood between the battlements of the castle, whom he addressed after this manner.

LOVE.

¹ A town of *Castile* famous for that instrument.

216 *The LIFE and EXPLOITS of*

L O V E.

*I am the mighty god of Love ;
Air, earth, and seas my power obey :
O'er hell beneath, and heaven above,
I reign with universal sway.*

*I give, resume, forbid, command ;
My will is nature's general law ;
No force arrests my powerful hand,
Nor fears my daring courage awe.*

He finished his stanza, let fly an arrow to the top of the castle, and retired to his post. Then *Interest* stepped forth, and made two other movements : The tabours ceased, and he said :

I N T E R E S T.

*Tho' love's my motive and my end,
I boast a greater power than Love,
Who makes not Interest his friend,
In nothing will successful prove.*

*By all ador'd, by all pursu'd ;
Then own, bright nymph, my greater sway,
And for thy gentle breast subdu'd
With large amends shall Int'rest pay.*

Then *Interest* withdrew, and *Poetry* advanced ; and, after she had made her movements like the rest, fixing her eyes on the damsel of the castle, she said :

P O E T R Y.

*My name is Poetry : my soul,
Wrapp'd up in verse, to thee I send :
Let gentle lays thy will controul,
And be for once the Muses friend.*

If,



Vanderbank inv.

T. Chambers scul.



F
E

v
a
lo
m
e
g
fe
ta
h
o
an
an
e
L
c
n
a
re

*If, lovely maid, sweet Poetry
 Displease thee not, thy fortune soon,
 Envy'd by all, advanc'd by me,
 Shall reach the circle of the moon.*

Poetry went off, and from the side of *Interest* stepped forth *Liberality*, and, after making her movements, said :

LIBERALITY.

*Me Liberality men call ;
 In me the happy golden mean,
 Not spendthrift-like to squander all,
 Nor niggardly to save, is seen.*

*But, for thy honour, I begin,
 Fair nymph, a prodigal to prove :
 To lavish here's a glorious sin ;
 For who'd a miser be in love ?*

In this manner all the figures of the two parties advanced and retreated, and each made its movements, and recited its verses, some elegant, and some ridiculous ; of which *Don Quixote*, who had a very good memory, treasured up these only. Presently they mixed all together, in a kind of country-dance, with a genteel grace and easy freedom : and when *Cupid* passed before the castle, he shot his arrows aloft ; but *Interest* flung gilded balls against it. In conclusion, after having danced some time, *Interest* drew out a large purse of *Roman* catskin, which seemed to be full of money ; and throwing it at the castle, the boards were disjoined, and tumbled down with the blow, leaving the damsel exposed, and without any defence at all. Then came *Interest* with his followers, and, clapping a great golden chain about her neck, they seemed to take her prisoner, and lead her away captive : which *Love* and his adherents perceiving, made a shew as if they would rescue her : and all their seeming efforts were adjusted

to the found of the tabors. They were parted by the savages, who with great agility rejoined the boards, and reinstated the castle, and the damsel was again enclosed therein as before : and so the dance ended, to the great satisfaction of the spectators.

Don Quixote asked one of the nymphs, who had contrived and ordered the shew ? She answered, a beneficed clergyman of that village, who had a notable head-piece for such kind of inventions. I will lay a wager, quoth *Don Quixote*, that this batchelor or clergyman is more a friend to *Camacho* than to *Basilus*, and understands satire better than vespers : for he has ingeniously interwoven in the dance the abilities of *Basilus* with the riches of *Camacho*. *Sancho Pança*, who listened to all this, said : The king is my cock ; I hold with *Camacho*. In short, quoth *Don Quixote*, it is plain you are an arrant bumpkin, and one of those, who cry, Long live the conqueror ! I know not who I am one of, answered *Sancho* : but I know very well, I shall never get such elegant scum from *Basilus's* pots, as I have done from *Camacho's*. Here he shewed the cauldron-full of geese and hens ; and, laying hold of one, he began to eat with notable good-humour and appetite, and said : A fig for *Basilus's* abilities ! for, you are worth just as much as you have, and you have just as much as you are worth. There are but two families in the world, as my grandmother used to say ; the *Have's* and the *Have-not's*, and she stuck to the former ; and now-a days, my dear master *Don Quixote*, people are more inclined to feel the pulse of *Have* than *Know*. An ass with golden furniture makes a better figure than a horse with a pack-saddle : so that I tell you again, I hold with *Camacho*, the abundant scum of whose pots are geese and hens, hares and coneys ; whilst that of *Basilus's*, if ever it comes to hand, must be mere dish-water. Have you finished your harangue, *Sancho* ? quoth *Don Quixote*. I must have done, answered *Sancho*, because I perceive your worship is going to be in a passion at what I am saying : for, were it not for that, there was work enough cut out for three days. God grant,

replied

replied *Don Quixote*, I may see you dumb before I die. At the rate we go on, answered *Sancho*, before you die, I shall be mumbling cold clay; and then perhaps I may be so dumb, that I may not speak a word 'till the end of the world, or at least 'till doomsday. Though it should fall out so, answered *Don Quixote*, your silence, O *Sancho*, will never rise to the pitch of your talk, past, present, and to come: besides, according to the course of nature, I must die before you, and therefore never can see you dumb, not even when drinking or sleeping, which is the most I can say. In good faith, Sir, answer *Sancho*, there is no trusting to madam *Skeleton*, I mean, death, who devours lambs as well as sheep: and I have heard our vicar say, she treads with equal foot on the lofty towers of kings, and the humble cottages of the poor¹. That same gentlewoman is more powerful than nice: she is not at all squeamish; she eats of every thing, and lays hold of all; and stuffs her wallets with people of all sorts, of all ages and preeminences. She is not a reaper that sleeps away the noon day heat; for she cuts down and mows, at all hours, the dry as well as the green grass: nor does she stand to chew, but devours and swallows down all that comes in her way; for she has a canine appetite that is never satisfied; and, though she has no belly, she makes it appear that she has a perpetual dropsy, and a thirst to drink down the lives of all that live, as one would drink a cup of cool water. Hold, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, while you are well, and do not spoil all; for, in truth, what you have said of death, in your rustic phrases, might become the mouth of a good preacher. I tell you, *Sancho*, if you had but discretion equal to your natural abilities, you might take a pulpit in your hand, and go about the world preaching fine things. A good liver is the best preacher, answered *Sancho*, and that is all the divinity I know. Or need know, quoth *Don*

K 2

Quixote :

¹ The very words of *Horace* :

*Improba mors æquo pulsat pede pauperum tabernas,
Regumque tures.*

Quixote: but I can in no wise understand, nor comprehend, how, since the fear of god is the beginning of wisdom, you, who are more afraid of a lizzard than of him, should be so knowing. Good your worship, judge of your own chivalries, answered *Sancho*, and meddle not with judging of other men's fears or valours; for perhaps I am as pretty a fearer of god as any of my neighbours; and pray let me whip off this scum; for all besides is idle talk, of which we must give an account in the next world. And so saying, he fell to afresh, and assaulted his kettle with so long-winded an appetite, that he awakened that of *Don Quixote*, who doubtless would have assisted him, had he not been prevented by what we are under a necessity of immediately telling.

C H A P. IV.

In which is continued the story of Camacho's wedding, with other delightful accidents.

WHILE *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* were engaged in the discourses mentioned in the preceding chapter, they heard a great outcry and noise, raised and occasioned by those that rode on the mares, who, in full career, and with a great shout, went to meet the bride and bridegroom, who were coming, surrounded with a thousand kinds of musical instruments and inventions, accompanied by the parish-priest and the kindred on both sides, and by all the better sort of people from the neighbouring towns, all in their holy-day apparel. And when *Sancho* espied the bride, he said: in good faith, she is not clad like a country girl, but like any court lady: By the mass, the breast-piece ¹ she wears seems to me at this distance to be of rich coral; and her gown, instead of green stuff of *Cuenca*, is no less than a thirty-piled velvet: besides, the trimming, I vow, is of satin. Then do but observe her hands: instead of rings of jet, let me never thrive,

¹ *Patena*. A plate, or medal, with an image engraved on it, worn on the breast by way of ornament.

thrive, but they are of gold, ay, and of right gold, and adorned with pearls as white as a curd, and every one of them worth an eye of one's head. Ah whore-son jade ! and what fine hair she has ! if it is not false, I never saw longer nor fairer in all my life. Then her sprightliness and mien : why she is a very moving palm-tree, loaden with branches of dates ; for just so look the trinkets hanging at her hair, and about her neck : By my soul, the girl is so well plated over, she might pass current at any bank in *Flanders* ¹. Don Quixote smiled at the rustic praises bestowed by Sancho Pança, and thought that, setting aside his mistress *Dulcinea del Toboso*, he had never seen a more beautiful woman. The fair *Quiteria* looked a little pale, occasioned, perhaps, by want of rest the preceding night ; which brides alway employ in setting themselves off, and dressing for their wedding-day following.

They proceeded towards a theatre on one side of the meadow, adorned with carpets and boughs ; where the nuptial ceremony was to be performed, and from whence they were to see the dances and inventions. And, just as they arrived at the standing, they heard a great outcry behind them, and somebody calling aloud : hold a little, inconsiderate and hasty people. At which voice and words they all turned about their heads, and found they came from a man clad in a black jacket, all welted with crimson in flames. He was crowned, as they presently perceived, with a garland of mournful cyprus, and held in his hand a great truncheon. As he drew near, all knew him to be the gallant *Basilus*, and were in suspense, waiting to see what would be the issue of this procedure, and apprehending some sinister event from his arrival at such a season. At length he came up, tired and out of breath, and planting himself just before the affianced couple, and leaning on his truncheon which had a steel pike at the end, changing colour, and fixing his eyes on *Quiteria*, with a trembling and hoarse voice, he uttered these expressions : Well you know, forgetful *Quiteria*,

K 3

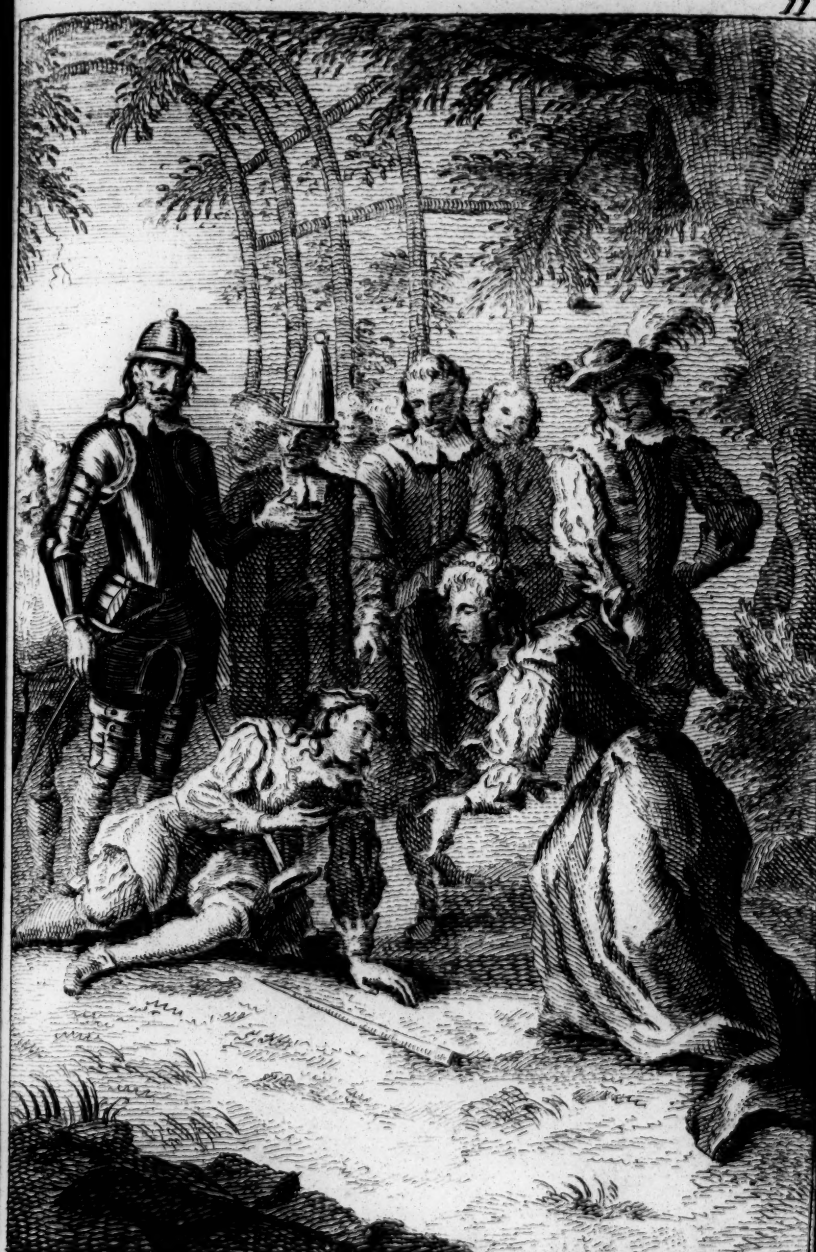
that,

¹ At that time *Antwerp*, and other towns of the *Low-Countries*, were the grand mart of all *Europe* for trade and exchanges.

that, by the rules of that holy religion we profess, you cannot marry another man whilst I am living: neither are you ignorant, that, waiting 'till time and my own industry should better my fortune, I have not failed to preserve the decorum due to your honour. But you, casting all obligations due to my lawful love behind your back, are going to make another man master of what is mine; whose riches serve not only to make him happy in the possession of them, but every way superlatively fortunate: and that his good luck may be heaped brim-full (not that I think he deserves it, but that heaven will have it so) I with my own hands will remove all impossibility or inconvenience by removing myself out of his way. Long live the rich *Camacho* with the ungrateful *Quiteria*; many and happy ages may they live, and let poor *Basilus* dye, whose poverty clipped the wings of his good fortune, and laid him in his grave. And so saying, he laid hold on his truncheon, which was stuck in the ground, and drawing out a short tuck that was concealed in it, and to which it served as a scabbard, and setting what may be called the hilt upon the ground, with a nimble spring and determinate purpose, he threw himself upon it; and in an instant half the bloody point appeared at his back, the poor wretch lying along upon the ground, weltering in his blood, and pierced through with his own weapon.

His friends ran presently to his assistance, grieved at his misery and deplorable disaster; and *Don Quixote*, quitting *Rozinante*, ran also to assist, and took him in his arms, and found he had still life in him. They would have drawn out the tuck: but the priest, who was by, was of opinion, it should not be drawn out 'till he had made his confession; for their pulling it out, and his expiring, would happen at the same moment. But *Basilus*, coming a little to himself, with a faint and doleful voice, said: If, cruel *Quiteria*, in this my last and fatal agony, you would give me your hand to be my spouse, I should hope my rashness might be pardoned, since it procured me the blessing of being yours. Which the priest hearing advised him to mind

the



Wanderbank inv.

L. Chamberlain scul.

the salvation of his soul, rather than the gratifying his bodily appetites, and in good earnest to beg pardon of god for his sins, and especially for this last desperate action. To which *Basilus* replied, that he would by no means make any confession, 'till *Quiteria* had first given him her hand to be his wife; for that satisfaction would quiet his spirits, and give him breath for confession. *Don Quixote*, hearing the wounded man's request, said in a loud voice, that *Basilus* desired a very just and very reasonable thing, and besides very easy to be done; and that it would be every whit as honourable for Signor *Camacho* to take *Quiteria*, a widow of the brave *Basilus*, as if he received her at her father's hands; all that was necessary being but a bare *yes*, which could have no other consequence than the pronouncing the word, since the nuptial-bed of these espousals must be the grave. *Camacho* heard all this, and was in suspense and confusion, not knowing what to do or say; but so importunate were the cries of *Basilus*'s friends, desiring him to consent, that *Quiteria* might give her hand to be *Basilus*'s wife, lest his soul should be lost by departing out of this life in despair, that they moved and forced him to say, that, if *Quiteria* thought fit to give it him, he was contented, since it was only delaying for a moment the accomplishment of his wishes. Presently all ran and applied to *Quiteria*, and some with intreaties, others with tears, and others with persuasive reasons, importuned her to give her hand to poor *Basilus*: but she, harder than marble, and more immoveable than a statue, neither could, nor would return any answer. But the priest bid her resolve immediately; for *Basilus* had his soul between his teeth, and there was no time to wait for irresolute determinations. Then the beautiful *Quiteria*, without answering a word, and in appearance much troubled and concerned, approached *Basilus*, his eyes already turned in his head, breathing short and quick, muttering the name of *Quiteria*, and giving tokens of dying more like a heathen than a christian. At last *Quiteria*,

kneeling down by him, made signs to him for his hand. *Basilus* unclosed his eyes, and, fixing them stedfastly upon her, said: O *Quiteria*, you relent at a time, when your pity is a sword to finish the taking away of my life: for now I have not enough left to bear the glory you give me in making me yours, nor to suspend the pain, which will presently cover my eyes with the dreadful shadow of death. What I beg of you is, O fatal star of mine, that the hand you require and give, be not out of compliment, or to deceive me afresh; but that you would confess and acknowledge, that you bestow it without any force laid upon your will, and give it me, as to your lawful husband: for it is not reasonable, that, in this extremity, you should impose upon me, or deal falsely with him, who has dealt so faithfully and sincerely with you. At these words he was seized with such a fainting fit, that all the by-standers thought his soul was just departing. *Quiteria*, all modesty and bashfulness, taking *Basilus's* right hand in her's, said: No force would be sufficient to bias my will; and therefore, with all the freedom I have, I give you my hand to be your lawful wife, and receive yours, if you give it me as freely, and the calamity you have brought yourself into by your precipitate resolution does not disturb or hinder it. Yes, I give it you, answered *Basilus*, neither discomposed nor confused, but with the clearest understanding that heaven was ever pleased to bestow upon me; and so I give and engage myself to be your husband. And I to be your wife, answered *Quiteria*, whether you live many years, or are carried from my arms to the grave. For one so much wounded, quoth *Sancho Pança* at this period, this young man talks a great deal: advise him to leave off his courtship, and mind the business of his soul; though, to my thinking, he has it more in his tongue, than between his teeth ¹.

Basilus and *Quiteria* being thus with hands joined, the tender-hearted priest, with tears in his eyes, pronounced

¹ Alluding to the phrase made use of before to hasten *Quiteria*.

nounced the benediction upon them, and prayed to god for the repose of the new-married man's soul: who, as soon as he had received the benediction, suddenly started up, and nimbly drew out the tuck, which was sheathed in his body. All the by-standers were in admiration, and some, more simple than the rest, began to cry aloud, a miracle, a miracle! But *Basilus* replied; no miracle, no miracle, but a stratagem, a stratagem! The priest, astonished and confounded, ran with both his hands to feel the wound, and found, that the sword had passed, not through *Basilus's* flesh and ribs, but through a hollow iron pipe, filled with blood, and cunningly fitted to the place and purpose; and, as it was known afterwards, the blood was prepared by art, that it could not congeal. In short, the priest, *Camacho*, and the rest of the by-standers, found they were imposed upon, and deceived. The bride shewed no signs of being sorry for the trick: on the contrary, hearing it said, that the marriage, as being fraudulent, was not valid, she said, she confirmed it a-new: from whence every body concluded the business was concerted with the knowledge and privity of both parties; at which *Camacho* and his abettors were so confounded, that they transferred their revenge to their hands, and, unsheathing abundance of swords, they fell upon *Basilus*, in whose behalf as many more were instantly drawn. *Don Quixote*, leading the vanguard on horse-back, with his launce upon his arm, and well covered with his shield, made them all give way. *Sancho*, who took no pleasure in such kind of frays, retired to the jars, out of which he had gotten his charming skimmings, that place seeming to him to be sacred, and therefore to be revered. *Don Quixote* cried aloud: Hold, Sirs, hold; for it is not fit to take revenge for the injuries done us by love: and pray consider, that love and war are exactly alike; and as, in war, it is lawful and customary to employ cunning and stratagems to defeat the enemy, so, in amorous conflicts and rivalship, it is allowable to put in practice tricks and slights, in order to compass the desired end, provided they be not to the prejudice

226 *The LIFE and EXPLOITS of*

and dishonour of the party beloved. *Quiteria* was *Basilus's*, and *Basilus Quiteria's*, by the just and favourable disposition of heaven. *Camacho* is rich, and may purchase his pleasure when, where, and how he pleases. *Basilus* has but this one ewe-lamb, and no one, how powerful soever, has a right to take it from him¹; for those, whom god hath joined together, let no man put asunder: and whoever shall attempt it, must first pass the point of this lance. Then he brandished it with such vigour and dexterity, that he struck terror into all that did not know him. But *Quiteria's* disdain took such fast hold of the imagination of *Camacho*, that it presently blotted her out of his memory; and so the persuasions of the priest, who was a prudent and well meaning man, had their effect, and *Camacho* and those of his faction remained pacified and calmed: in token whereof they put up their swords again in their scabbards, blaming rather the fickleness of *Quiteria*, than the cunning of *Basilus*. *Camacho* reasoned with himself, that, if *Quiteria* loved *Basilus* when she was a virgin, she would love him also when she was married, and that he had more reason to thank heaven for so good a riddance, than to repine at the loss of her. *Camacho* and his followers being thus pacified and comforted, those of *Basilus* were so too, and the rich *Camacho*, to shew he did not stomach the slur put upon him, nor value it at all, would have the diversions and entertainment go on, as if he had been really married: but neither *Basilus*, nor his spouse, nor their followers, would partake of them; and so they went home to *Basilus's* house: for the poor man, who is virtuous and discreet, has those that follow, honour, and stand by him, as well as the rich has his attendants and flatterers. They took *Don Quixote* with them, esteeming him to be a person of extraordinary worth and bravery. Only *Sancho's* soul was cloudy and overcast, finding it impossible for him to stay and partake of *Camacho's* splendid entertainment and festival, which lasted 'till night; and thus drooping and sad he followed

¹ Alluding to *Nathan's* parable of the ewe-lamb. 2. *Sam.* xii,

lowed his master, who went off with *Basilus's* troop, leaving behind him the flesh-pots of *Ægypt*, which however he carried in his mind, the skimmings of the kettle, now almost consumed and spent, representing to him the glory and abundance of the good he had lost; and so, anxious and pensive, though not hungry, and without alighting from *Dapple*, he followed the track of *Rozinante*.

C H A P. V.

Wherein is related the grand adventure of the cave of Montesinos, lying in the heart of La Mancha; to which the valorous Don Quixote gave a happy conclusion.

THE new-married couple made exceeding much of *Don Quixote*, being obliged by the readiness he had shewed in defending their cause: and they esteemed his discretion in equal degree with his valour, accounting him a *Cid*¹ in arms, and a *Cicero* in eloquence. Three days honest *Sancho* solaced himself at the expence of the bride and bridegroom; from whom it was known, that the feigned wounding himself was not a trick concerted with the fair *Quiteria*, but an invention of *Basilus's* own, hoping from it the very success, which fell out. True it is, he confessed, he had let some of his friends into the secret, that they might favour his design, and support his deceit. *Don Quixote* affirmed, it could not, nor ought to be called deceit, which aims at virtuous ends, and that the marriage of lovers was the most excellent of all ends: observing by the way, that hunger and continual necessity are the greatest enemies to love; for love is gaiety, mirth, and content, especially when the lover is in actual possession of the person beloved, to which necessity and poverty are opposed and declared enemies. All this he said with design to persuade *Basilus* to quit the exercise of those abilities, wherein

1. *Roderigo Dias de Bivar*, commonly called *Cid*, a great Spanish Commander against the Moors.

228 *The LIFE and EXPLOITS of*

wherein he so much excelled; for, though they procured him fame, they got him no money; and that now he should apply himself to acquire riches by lawful and industrious means, which are never wanting to the prudent and diligent. The poor man of honour (if a poor man can be said to have honour) possesses a jewel in having a beautiful wife; and who ever deprives him of her, deprives him of his honour, and as it were kills it. The beautiful and honourable woman, whose husband is poor, deserves to be crowned with laurels and palms of victory and triumph. Beauty, of itself alone, attracts the inclinations of all that behold it, and the royal eagles and other towering birds stoop to the tempting lure. But if such beauty be attended with poverty and a narrow fortune, it is besieged by kites and vultures, and other birds of prey; and she, who stands firm against so many attacks, may well be called the crown of her husband. Observe, discreet *Basilus*, added *Don Quixote*, that it was the opinion of a certain sage, that there was but one good woman in all the world; and he gave it as his advice, that every man should think, and believe, she was fallen to his lot, and so he would live contented. I for my part am not married, nor has any thought ever yet come into my head that way: yet would I venture to give my advice to any one, who should ask it of me, what method he should take to get a wife to his mind. In the first place, I would advise him to lay a greater stress upon character than fortune; for a good woman does not acquire a good name merely by being good, but by appearing to be so; for publick freedoms and liberties hurt a woman's reputation much more than secret wantonness. If you bring a woman honest to your house, it is an easy matter to keep her so, and even to make her better, and improve her very goodness: but if you bring her naughty, you will have much ado to mend her; for it is not very feasible to pass from one extreme to another. I do not say, it is impossible; but I take it to be extremely difficult.

All

All this *Sancho* listened to, and said to himself: This master of mine, when I speak things pithy and substantial, used to say I might take a pulpit in my hand, and go about the world preaching fine things; and I say of him, that, when he begins stringing of sentences, and giving advice, he may not only take a pulpit in his hand, but two upon each finger, and stroll about your market-places, crying, Mouth, what would you have? The devil take thee for a knight-errant that knows every thing! I believed in my heart, that he only knew what belonged to his chivalries; but he pecks at every thing, and thrusts his spoon into every dish. *Sancho* muttered this so loud, that his master, over-hearing it, said to him: *Sancho*, what is it you mutter? I neither say, nor mutter, any thing, answered *Sancho*: I was only saying to myself, that I wished I had heard your worship preach this doctrine before I was married; then perhaps I should have been able to say now, The ox that is loose is best licked. Is your *Teresa*, then, so bad, *Sancho*? quoth *Don Quixote*. She is not very bad, answered *Sancho*; but she is not very good neither, at least not quite so good as I would have her. You are in the wrong, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, to speak ill of your wife, who is the mother of your children. We are not in one another's debt upon that score, answered *Sancho*; for she speaks as ill of me, whenever the fancy takes her, especially when she is jealous; for then *Satan* himself cannot bear with her.

Finally, three days they stayed with the new-married couple, where they were served and treated like kings in person. *Don Quixote* desired the dextrous student to furnish him with a guide, to bring him to the cave of *Montefinos*; for he had a mighty desire to go down into it, and see with his own eyes, whether the wonders related of it in all those parts were true. The student told him, he would procure him a first cousin of his, a famous scholar, and much addicted to reading books of chivalry, who would very gladly carry him to the mouth of the cave itself, and also shew him the lakes of *Ruydera*, famous all over

La Mancha, and even all over *Spain*; telling him, he would be a very entertaining companion, being a young man, who knew how to write books for the press, and dedicate them to princes. In short, the cousin came, mounted on an ass big with foal, whose pack-saddle was covered with a doubled piece of an old carpet or sacking. *Sancho* saddled *Roxinante*, pannelled *Dapple*, and replenished his wallets; and those of the scholar were as well provided: and so commending themselves to the protection of god, and taking leave of every body, they set out, bending their course directly towards the famous cave of *Montesinos*.

Upon the road, *Don Quixote* asked the scholar, of what kind and quality his exercises, profession, and studies were. To which he answered; That his profession was the study of humanity; his exercise, composing of books for the press, all of great use, and no small entertainment, to the commonwealth; that one of them was intitled *A treatise of liveries*, describing seven hundred and three liveries, with their colours, mottos, and cyphers; from whence the cavalier courtiers might pick and choose to their minds, for feasts and rejoicings, without being beholden to others, or beating their own brains to invent and contrive them to their humour or design: for, said he, I adapt them to the jealous, the disdain'd, the forgotten, and the absent, so properly, that more will hit than miss^r. I have also another book, which I intend to call *The metamorphoses* or *Spanish Ovid*, of a new and rare invention; for therein, imitating *Ovid* in a burlesque way, I shew who the *Giralda* of *Sevil* was, and who the angel of *La Magdalena*; what the conduit of *Veinguerra* of *Cordova*; what the bulls of *Guisando*; the fable mountain; the fountains of *Leganitos*, and the *Lavapies* in *Madrid*; not forgetting the *Piojo*, that of the golden pipe, and that of the *Priora*: and all these, with their several allegories, metaphors, and transformations, in such a manner as to delight, surprise,

^r Literally, *more will be Just than Sinners*. It is scripture language, and, the use of it here being impertinent at least, if not prophane, it is therefore softened and qualified in the translation.

prize, and instruct at the same time. I have another book, which I call a *Supplement to Polydor Virgil*, treating of the invention of things; a work of vast erudition and study, because therein I make out several material things omitted by *Polydor*, and explain them in a fine stile. *Virgil* forgot to tell us, who was the first in the world that had a cold, and who the first that was fluxed for the *French* disease: these points I resolve to a nicety, and cite the authority of above five and twenty authors for them: so that your worship may see whether I have taken true pains, and whether such a performance is not likely to be very useful to the whole world.

Sancho, who had been extremely attentive to the student's discourse, said: Tell me, Sir, so may god send you good luck in the printing your books, can you resolve me (for I know you can, since you know every thing) who was the first that scratched his head? I for my part am of opinion, it must be our first father *Adam*. Certainly, answered the scholar; for there is no doubt but *Adam* had a head of hair, and, this being granted, and he being the first man of the world, he must needs have scratched his head one time or another. So I believe, answered *Sancho*: but tell me now, who was the first tumbler in the world? Truly, brother, answered the scholar, I cannot determine that point 'till I have studied it; and I will study it as soon as I return to the place where I keep my books, and will satisfy you when we see one another again; for I hope this will not be the last time. Look ye, Sir, replied *Sancho*, take no pains about this matter; for I have already hit upon the answer to my question: Know then, that the first tumbler was *Lucifer*, when he was cast or thrown headlong from heaven, and came tumbling down to the lowest abyss. You are in the right, friend, quoth the scholar: And *Don Quixote* said; This question and answer are not your own, *Sancho*; you have heard them from somebody else. Say no more, Sir, replied *Sancho*; for, in good faith, if I fall to questioning and answering, I shall not have done between this and to-morrow morning:

for

for foolish questions and ridiculous answers, I need not be obliged to any of my neighbours. *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, you have said more than you are aware of; for some there are, who tire themselves with examining into, and explaining things, which, after they are known and explained, signify not a farthing to the understanding or the memory.

In these, and other pleasant discourses, they passed that day, and at night they lodged in a small village, from whence, the scholar told *Don Quixote*, there were but two leagues to the cave of *Montefinos*, and that, if he continued his resolution to enter into it, it would be necessary to provide himself with rope to tie and let himself down into its depth. *Don Quixote* said, if it reached the abyss, he would see where it stopped; and so they bought near an hundred fathom of cord, and, about two in the afternoon following, they came to the cave, the mouth of which is wide and spacious, but full of briars, wild fig-trees, and thorns, so thick and intricate, that they quite blind and cover it. When they arrived at it, the scholar, *Sancho*, and *Don Quixote* alighted: then the two former bound the knight very fast with the cord, and, while they were swathing him, *Sancho* said: Have a care, dear Sir, what you do: do not bury yourself alive, nor hang yourself dangling like a flask of wine let down to cool in a well; for it is no business of your worship's, nor does it belong to you, to be the scrutinizer of this hole, which must needs be worse than any dungeon. Tie on, and talk not, answered *Don Quixote*; for such an enterprize as this, friend *Sancho*, was reserved for me alone. Then the guide said: I beseech your worship, Signor *Don Quixote*, to take good heed, and look about you with an hundred eyes, and explore what is below: perhaps there may be things proper to be inserted in my book of metamorphoses. The drum is in a hand that knows full well how to rattle it, answered *Sancho Pança*. This being said, and the tying of *Don Quixote* (not over his armour, but his doublet) finished, *Don Quixote* said: We have been very careless in neglecting to provide a little bell, to be tied

to me with this rope ; by the tinkling of which you might hear me still descending, and know that I was alive : but since that is now impossible, be the hand of god my guide. And immediately he kneeled down, and, in a low voice, put up a prayer to heaven for assistance and good success in this seemingly perilous and strange adventure : then of a sudden, in a loud voice, he said : O mistress of my actions and motions, most illustrious and peerless *Dulcinea del Toboso* ! if it be possible that the prayers and requests of this thy adventurous lover reach thy ears, I beseech thee, for thy unheard of beauty's sake, hearken to them ; for all I beg of thee is, not to refuse me thy favour and protection, now that I do so much need it. I am just going to precipitate, to ingulph, and sink myself in the profound abyss here before me, only to let the world know, that, if thou favourest me, there is no impossibility I will not undertake and accomplish. And, so saying, he drew near to the brink, and saw he could not be let down, nor get at the entrance of the cave, but by mere force, and cutting his way through : and so, laying his hand to his sword, he began to lay about him, and hew down the brambles and bushes at the mouth of the cave ; at which noise and rustling, an infinite number of huge ravens and daws flew out so thick and so fast, that they beat *Don Quixote* to the ground ; and had he been as superstitious, as he was catholic, he had taken it for an ill omen, and forborn shutting himself up in such a place. At length, he got upon his legs, and seeing no more ravens flying out, nor other night-birds, such as bats, (some of which likewise flew out among the ravens) the scholar and *Sancho*, giving him rope, let him down to the bottom of the fearful cavern : and, at his going in, *Sancho*, giving him his blessing, and making a thousand crosses over him, said : God, and the rock of *France*, together with the trinity of *Gaëta*, speed thee, thou flower, and cream, and skimming of knights-errant ! There thou goest, *Hector* of the world, heart of steel, and arms of brass ! Once more, god guide thee, and send thee back safe and sound, without deceit,

ceit, to the light of this world, which thou art forsaking, to bury thy self in this obscurity. The scholar uttered much the same prayers and intercessions.

Don Quixote went down, calling for more and more rope, which they gave him by little and little; and when the voice, by the windings of the cave, could be heard no longer; and the hundred fathom of cordage was all let down, they were of opinion to pull *Don Quixote* up again, since they could give him no more rope. However they delayed about half an hour, and then they began to gather up the rope, which they did very easily, and without any weight at all; from whence they conjectured, that *Don Quixote* remained in the cave; and *Sancho*, believing as much, wept bitterly, and drew up in a great hurry, to know the truth: but, coming to a little above eighty fathoms, they felt a weight, at which they rejoiced exceedingly. In short, at about the tenth fathom, they discerned *Don Quixote* very distinctly; to whom *Sancho* called out, saying: Welcome back to us, dear Sir; for we began to think you had staid there to breed. But *Don Quixote* answered not a word; and, pulling him quite out, they perceived his eyes were shut, as if he was asleep. They laid him along on the ground, and untied him; yet still he did not awake. But they so turned, and jogged, and re-turned, and shook him, that, after a good while, he came to himself, stretching and yawning just as if he had awaked out of a heavy and deep sleep: and gazing from side to side, as if he was amazed, he said: God forgive ye, friends, for having brought me away from the most pleasing and charming life and sight, that ever mortal saw or lived. In short, I am now thoroughly satisfied, that all the enjoyments of this life pass away like a shadow or a dream, and fade away like the flower of the field. O unhappy *Montesinos*! O desperately wounded *Durandarte*! O unfortunate *Belerma*! O weeping *Guadiana*! And ye unlucky daughters of *Ruydera*, whose waters shew what floods of tears streamed from your fair eyes! The scholar and *Sancho* listened to *Don Quixote*'s words, which he spoke, as if with immense
pain

pain he fetched them from his very entrails. They entreated him to explain to them what it was he had been saying, and to tell them what he had seen in that hell below. Hell do you call it? said *Don Quixote*: call it so no more; for it does not deserve that name, as you shall presently see. He desired, they would give him something to eat; for he was very hungry. They spread the scholar's carpet upon the green grass; they addressed themselves to the pantry of his wallets, and, being all three seated in loving and social wise, they collationed and supped all under one. The carpet being removed, *Don Quixote de la Mancha* said: Let no one arise, and, sons, be attentive to me.

C H A P. VI.

Of the wonderful things, which the unexampled Don Quixote de la Mancha declared he had seen in the deep cave of Montefinos, the greatness and impossibility of which make this adventure pass for apocryphal.

IT was about four of the clock in the afternoon, when the sun, hid among the clouds, with a faint light and temperate rays, gave *Don Quixote* an opportunity, without extraordinary heat or trouble, of relating to his two illustrious hearers, what he had seen in the cave of *Montefinos*; and he began in the following manner.

About twelve or fourteen fathom in the depth of this dungeon, on the right hand, there is a hollow, and space wide enough to contain a large waggon mules and all: a little light makes its way into it, through some cracks and holes at a distance in the surface of the earth. This hollow and open space I saw, just as I began to be weary, and out of humour to find myself pendent and tied by the rope, and journeying through that dark region below, without knowing whither I was going: and so I determined to enter into it, and rest a little. I called out to you aloud, not to let down more rope 'till I bid you: but, it seems,

seems, you heard me not. I gathered up the cord you had let down, and, coiling it up into a heap, or bundle, I sat me down upon it, extremely pensive, and considering what method I should take to descend to the bottom, having nothing to support my weight. And being thus thoughtful, and in confusion, on a sudden, without any endeavour of mine, a deep sleep fell upon me; and, when I least thought of it, I awaked, and found my self, I knew not by what means, in the midst of the finest, pleasantest, and most delightful meadow, that nature could create, or the most pregnant fancy imagine. I rubbed my eyes, wiped them, and perceived I was not asleep, but really awake: but for all that I fell to feeling my head and breast, to be assured whether it was I my self, who was there, or some empty and counterfeit illusion: but feeling, sensation, and the coherent discourse I made to my self, convinced me, that I was then there the same person I am now here. Immediately a royal and splendid palace or castle presented it self to my view; the walls and battlements whereof seemed to be built of clear and transparent chrystal: from out of which, through a pair of great folding doors, that opened of their own accord, I saw come forth, and advance towards me, a venerable old man, clad in a long mourning cloak of purple bays, which trailed upon the ground. Over his shoulders and breast he wore a kind of collegiate tippet of green satin: he had a black *Milan* cap on his head, and his hoary beard reached below his girdle. He carried no weapons at all, only a rosary of beads in his hand, bigger than middling walnuts, and every tenth bead like an ordinary ostrich egg. His mien, his gait, his gravity, and his goodly presence, each by itself, and all together, surprized and amazed me. He came up to me, and the first thing he did, was, to embrace me close; and then he said: It is a long time, most valorous knight *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, that we, who in these solitudes are shut up and enchanted, have hoped to see you, that the world by you may be informed what this deep cave, commonly called the cave of *Montefinos*, in-

closes

clothes and conceals ; an exploit reserved for your invincible heart and stupendous courage. Come along with me, illustrious Sir, that I may shew you the wonders contained in this transparent castle, of which I am warder and perpetual guard ; for I am *Montesinos* himself, from whom this cave derives its name. Scarce had he told me he was *Montesinos*, when I asked him whether it was true, which was reported in the world above, that with a little dagger he had taken out the heart of his great friend *Durandarte*, and carried it to his lady *Belerma*, as he had desired him at the point of death. He replied, all was true, excepting as to the dagger ; for it was neither a dagger, nor little, but a bright poniard sharper than an awl.

That poniard, interrupted *Sancho*, must have been made by *Raymond de Hozes* of *Sevil*. I do not know, continued *Don Quixote* : but, upon second thoughts, it could not be of his making ; for *Raymond de Hozes* lived but the other day, and the battle of *Roncesvalles*, where this misfortune happened, was fought many years ago. But this objection is of no importance, and neither disorders nor alters the truth and connexion of the story. True, answered the scholar ; pray go on, Signor *Don Quixote*, for I listen to you with the greatest pleasure in the world. And I tell it with no less, answered *Don Quixote*, and so I say :

The venerable *Montesinos* conducted me to the chrystaline palace, where, in a lower hall, extremely cool, and all of alabaster, there stood a marble tomb of exquisite workmanship, whereon I saw, laid at full length, a cavalier, not of brass, or marble, or jasper, as is usual on other monuments, but of pure flesh and bones. His right hand, which, to my thinking, was pretty hairy and nervous (a sign that its owner was very strong) was laid on the region of his heart ; and before I could ask any question, *Montesinos*, perceiving me in some suspense, and my eyes fixed on the sepulchre, said : This is my friend *Durandarte*, the flower and mirror of all the enamoured and valiant knights-errant of his time. *Merlin*, that *French* enchanter, keeps

keeps him here enchanted, as he does me, and many others of both sexes. It is said, he is the son of the devil ; though I do not believe him to be the devil's son, but only, as the saying is, that he knows one point more than the devil himself. How, or why, he enchanted us, no body knows : but time will bring it to light, and I fancy it will not be long first. What I admire at, is, that I am as sure, as it is now day, that *Durandarte* expired in my arms, and that, after he was dead, I pulled out his heart with my own hands ; and indeed it could not weigh less than two pounds : for, according to the opinion of naturalists, he, who has a large heart, is endued with more courage, than he, who has a small one. It being then certain, that this cavalier really died, how comes it to pass, that he complains every now and then, and sighs, as if he were alive ?

This was no sooner said, but the wretched *Durandarte*, crying out aloud, said : O my dear cousin *Montefinos* ! the last thing I desired of you, when I was dying, and my soul departing, was to carry my heart, ripping it out of my breast with a dagger or poniard, to *Belerma*. The venerable *Montefinos*, hearing this, threw himself on his knees before the complaining cavalier, and, with tears in his eyes, said to him : Long since, O my dearest cousin *Durandarte*, I did what you enjoined me in that bitter day of our loss : I took out your heart, as well as I could, without leaving the least bit of it in your breast ; I wiped it with a lace-handkerchief, took it, and went off full speed with it for *France*, having first laid you in the bosom of the earth, shedding as many tears as sufficed to wash my hands, and clean away the blood, which stuck to them by raking in your entrails. By the same token, dear cousin of my soul, in the first place I lighted upon, going from *Roncesvalles*, I sprinkled a little salt over your heart, that it might not stink, and might keep, if not fresh, at least dried up, 'till it came to the lady *Belerma*, who, together with you and me, and your squire *Guadiana*, and the *Duenna Ruydera*, and her seven daughters, and two nieces,

with

with several others of your friends and acquaintance, have been kept here enchanted by the sage *Merlin*, these many years past; and, though it be above five hundred years ago, not one of us is dead: only *Ruydera* and her daughters and nieces are gone, whom, because of their weeping, *Merlin*, out of compassion, turned into so many lakes, which, at this time, in the world of the living, and in the province of *La Mancha*, are called the lakes of *Ruydera*. The seven sisters belong to the kings of *Spain*, and the two nieces to the knights of a very holy order, called the knights of saint *John*. *Guadiana* also, your squire, bewailing your misfortune, was changed into a river of his own name; who, arriving at the surface of the earth, and seeing the sun of another sky, was so grieved at the thought of forsaking you, that he plunged again into the bowels of the earth: but, it being impossible to avoid taking the natural course, he rises now and then, and shews himself, where the sun and people may see him. The aforesaid lakes supply him with their waters, with which, and several others that join him, he enters stately and great into *Portugal*. Nevertheless, whithersoever he goes, he discovers his grief and melancholy, breeding in his waters, not delicate and costly fish, but only coarse and unfavoury ones, very different from those of the golden *Tagus*. And what I now tell you, O my dearest cousin, I have often told you before, and, since you make me no answer, I fancy, you do not believe me, or do not hear me; which, god knows, afflicts me very much. One piece of news however I will tell you, which, if it serves not to alleviate your grief, will in no wise encrease it. Know then, that you have here present (open your eyes, and you will see him) that great knight, of whom the sage *Merlin* prophesied so many things; that *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, I say, who, with greater advantages than in the ages past, has, in our days, restored the long forgotten order of knight-errantry; by whose means and favour, we may, perhaps, be disenchanting: for great exploits are reserved for great men. And though it should fall out

out otherwise, answered the poor *Durandarte* with a faint and low voice, though it should not prove so, O cousin, I say, patience, and shuffle the cards¹: and, turning himself on one side, he relapsed into his accustomed silence, without speaking a word more.

Then were heard great cries and wailings, accompanied with profound sighs and distressful sobbings. I turned my head about, and saw through the chrystal walls a procession in two files of most beautiful damsels, all clad in mourning, with white turbans on their heads after the *Turkish* fashion; and last of all, in the rear of the files, came a lady (for by her gravity she seemed to be such) clad also in black, with a white veil, so long, that it kissed the ground. Her turban was twice as large as the largest of the others: her eye-brows joined; her nose was somewhat flattish; her mouth wide, but her lips red: her teeth, which she sometimes shewed, were thin set, and not very even, though as white as blanch'd almonds. She carried in her hand a fine linnen handkerchief, and in it, as near as I could guess, a heart of mummy, so dry and withered it appeared to be. *Montesinos* told me, that all those of the procession were servants to *Durandarte* and *Belerma*, and were there enchanted with their master and mistress, and that she, who came last, bearing the heart in the linnen handkerchief, was the lady *Belerma* herself, who, four days in the week, makes that procession together with her damsels, singing, or rather weeping, dirges over the body, and over the piteous heart, of his cousin; and that if she appeared to me somewhat ugly, or not so beautiful as fame reported, it was occasioned by the bad nights and worse days she passed in that enchantment, as might be seen by the great wrinkles under her eyes, and her broken complexion: and as to her being pale and hollow-eyed, it was not occasioned by the periodical indisposition incident to women, there not having been, for several months, and even years past, the least appearance of any such matter; but merely by the affliction her heart
feels

¹ This phrase probably arose from hence, that losers usually shuffle the cards more than winners, and cry, patience.

feels from what she carries continually in her hands; which renews and revives in her memory the disaster of her untimely deceased lover: for, had it not been for this, the great *Dulcinea del Toboso* herself, so celebrated in these parts, and even over the whole world, would hardly have equalled her in beauty, good-humour, and sprightliness.

Fair and softly, quoth I then, good Signor *Don Montefinos*: tell your story as you ought to do; for you know, that comparisons are odious, and therefore there is no need of comparing any body with any body. The peerless *Dulcinea* is what she is, and the lady *Donna Belerma* is what she is, and what she has been, and so much for that. To which he answered: Signor *Don Quixote*, pardon me; I confess I was in the wrong, in saying, that the lady *Dulcinea* would hardly equal the lady *Belerma*: my understanding, by I know not what guesses, that your worship is her knight, ought to have made me bite my tongue sooner, than compare her to any thing but heaven it self. With this satisfaction given me by the great *Montefinos*, my heart was delivered from the surprize it was in at hearing my mistress compared with *Belerma*. And I too admire, quoth *Sancho*, that your worship did not fall upon the old fellow, and bruise his bones with kicking, and pluck his beard for him, 'till you had not left him a hair in it. No, friend *Sancho*, answered *Don Quixote*, it did not become me to do so; for we are all bound to respect old men, though they be not knights, and especially those who are such, and enchanted into the bargain. I know very well, I was not at all behind-hand with him in several other questions and answers, which passed between us.

Here the scholar said: I cannot imagine, Signor *Don Quixote*, how your worship, in the short space of time you have been there below, could see so many things, and talk and answer so much. How long is it since I went down? quoth *Don Quixote*. A little above an hour, answered *Sancho*. That cannot be, replied *Don Quixote*; for night came upon me there,

and then it grew day; and then night came again, and day again, three times successively; so that by my account I must have been three days in those parts, so remote and hidden from our sight. My master, said *Sancho*, must needs be in the right; for, as every thing has happened to him in the way of enchantment, what seems to us but an hour, may seem there three days and three nights. It is so, answered *Don Quixote*. And has your worship, good Sir, eaten any thing in all this time? quoth the scholar. I have not broken my fast with one mouthful, answered *Don Quixote*, nor have I been hungry, or so much as thought of it all the while. Do the enchanted eat? said the scholar. They do not eat, answered *Don Quixote*, nor are they troubled with the greater excrements, though it is a common opinion, that their nails, their beards, and their hair grow. And, Sir, do the enchanted sleep? quoth *Sancho*. No truly, answered *Don Quixote*; at least, in the three days that I have been amongst them, not one of them has closed an eye, nor I neither. Here, quoth *Sancho*, the proverb hits right, Tell me your company, and I will tell you what you are. If your worship keeps company with those, who fast and watch, what wonder is it that you neither eat nor sleep while you are with them? But pardon me, good master of mine, if I tell your worship, that, of all you have been saying, god take me (I was going to say the devil) if I believe one word. How so? said the scholar: Signor *Don Quixote* then must have lyed; who, if he had a mind to it, has not had time to imagine and compose such a heap of lyes. I do not believe my master lyes, answered *Sancho*. If not, what do you believe? quoth *Don Quixote*. I believe, answered *Sancho*, that that same *Merlin*, or those necromancers, who enchanted all the crew your worship says you saw and conversed with there below, have crammed into your imagination or memory all this stuff you have already told us, or that remains to be told.

Such

Such a thing may be, *Sancho*, replied *Don Quixote*¹; but it is not so: for what I have related I saw with my own eyes, and touched with my own hands: but what will you say, when I tell you, that, among an infinite number of things and wonders, shewed me by *Montesinos* (which I will recount in the progress of our journey, at leisure, and in their due time, for they do not all belong properly to this place) he shewed me three country wenches, who were dancing and capering like any kids about those charming fields; and scarce had I espied them, when I knew one of them to be the peerless *Dulcinea del Toboso*, and the other two the very same wenches that came with her, whom we talked with at their coming out of *Toboso*. I asked *Montesinos*, whether he knew them. He answered, no, but that he took them to be some ladies of quality lately enchanted, for they had appeared in those meadows but a few days before; and that I should not wonder at that, for there were a great many other ladies there, of the past and present ages, enchanted under various and strange figures, among whom he knew queen *Ginebra*, and her *Duenna Quintaniona*, cup-bearer to *Lancelot*, when he arrived from *Britain*. When *Sancho* heard his master say all this, he was ready to run distracted, or to die with laughing; for, as he knew the truth of the feigned enchantment of *Dulcinea*, of whom he himself had been the enchanter, and the bearer of that testimony, he concluded undoubtedly that his master had lost his senses, and was in all points mad; and therefore he said to him: In an evil juncture, and in a worse season, and in a bitter day, dear patron of mine, did you go down to the other world; and in an unlucky moment did you meet with Signor *Montesinos*, who has returned you back to us in such guise. Your worship was very well here above, entirely in your senses, such as god had given you, speaking sentences, and giving advice at every turn, and not, as now, relating the greatest extravagancies that can be imagined. As I know you, *Sancho*,

L 2

answered

¹ Observe, that *Don Quixote*, being actually caught by *Sancho* telling lyes, dares not, as usual, be angry at his sawciness.

answered *Don Quixote*, I make no account of your words. Nor I of your worship's, replied *Sancho*: You may hurt me if you will, you may kill me if you please, for those I have said already, or those I intend to say, if you do not correct and amend your own. But tell me, Sir, now we are at peace, how, or by what, did you know the lady our mistress? and if you spoke to her, what said you? and what answer did she make you? I knew her, answered *Don Quixote*, by the very same cloaths she wore when you shewed her to me. I spoke to her; but she answered me not a word: on the contrary, she turned her back upon me, and fled away with so much speed, that an arrow could not have overtaken her. I would have followed her; but *Montesinos* advised me not to tire my self with so doing, since it would be in vain; besides, it was now time for me to think of returning and getting out of the cave. He also told me, that, in process of time, I should be informed of the means of disenchanting himself, *Belerma*, *Durandarte*, and all the rest there. But what gave me the most pain of any thing I saw, or took notice of, was, that, while *Montesinos* was saying these things to me, there approached me on one side, unperceived by me, one of the two companions of the unfortunate *Dulcinea*, and, with tears in her eyes, in a low and troubled voice, said to me: My lady *Dulcinea del Toboso* kisses your worship's hands, and desires you to let her know how you do; and, being in great necessity, she also earnestly begs your worship would be pleased to lend her, upon this new dimity petticoat I have brought here, six reals, or what you have about you, which she promises to return very shortly. This message threw me into suspense and admiration, and, turning to Signor *Montesinos*, I demanded of him: Is it possible, Signor *Montesinos*, that persons of quality under enchantment suffer necessity? To which he answered: Believe me, Signor *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, that what is called necessity prevails every where, extends to all, and reaches every body, not excusing even those who are enchanted: and since the lady *Dulcinea* sends to desire of you those six reals, and the pawn is,

in

in appearance, a good one, there is no more to be done but to give her them; for without doubt she must needs be in some very great strait. I will take no pawn, answered I, nor can I send her what she desires; for I have but four reals: which I sent her, being those you gave me the other day, *Sancho*, to bestow in alms on the poor I should meet with upon the road; and said I to the damsel: Sweet-heart, tell your lady, that I am grieved to my soul at her distresses, and wish I were a *Fucar*¹ to remedy them: and pray let her know, that I neither can nor will have health, while I want her amiable presence, and discreet conversation; and that I beseech her with all imaginable earnestness, that she would vouchsafe to let herself be seen and conversed with by this her captive servant and bewildered knight. Tell her, that, when she least thinks of it, she will hear it said, that I have made an oath and vow, like that made by the marquis of *Mantua*, to revenge his nephew *Valdovinos*, when he found him ready to expire in the midst of the mountain; which was, not to eat bread upon a table-cloth, with the other idle whims he then added, 'till he had revenged his death. In like manner will I take no rest, but traverse the seven parts of the universe, with more punctuality than did the infante *Don Pedro* of *Portugal*², 'till she be disenchanting. All this and more your worship owes my lady, answered the damsel, and, taking the four reals, instead of making me a courtly, she cut a caper full two yards high in the air.

O holy god! cried *Sancho* aloud at this juncture, is it possible there should be such a one in the world, and that enchanters and enchantments should have such power over him, as to change my master's

L 3

good

¹ A rich German family of *Augsburg*, made noble by *Charles* the fifth. The name is *Fugger*, and wonderful stories are told of their riches, the greatest part of the money spent in that prince's wars having passed through their hands.

² A great voyager, astronomer, and cosmographer, who first began the designs of the *Portuguese* on the *East Indies*, by the *Cape of Good-Hope*. He was fourth son to *John* the first.

good understanding into so extravagant a madness ! O Sir ! Sir ! for god's sake, look to your self, and stand up for your honour, and give no credit to these vanities, which have diminished and decayed your senses. It is your love of me, *Sancho*, makes you talk at this rate, quoth *Don Quixote* ; and not being experienced in the things of the world, you take every thing, in which there is the least difficulty, for impossible : but the time will come, as I said before, when I shall tell you some other of the things I have seen below, which will make you give credit to what I have now told you, the truth of which admits of no reply nor dispute.

C H A P. VII.

In which are recounted a thousand impertinencies necessary to the right understanding of this faithful history.

THE translator of this grand history from the original, written by its first author *Cid Hamet Ben-engeli*, says, that, coming to the chapter of the adventure of the cave of *Montesinos*, he found in the margin these words of *Hamet's* own hand-writing :

I cannot persuade my self, or believe, that all that is mentioned in the foregoing chapter happened to the valorous *Don Quixote* exactly as it is there written : the reason is, because all the adventures hitherto related might have happened and are probable ; but in this of the cave I find no possibility of its being true, as it exceeds all reasonable bounds. But for me to think, that *Don Quixote*, being a gentleman of the greatest veracity, and a knight of the most worth of any of his time, would tell a lye, is as little possible ; for he would not utter a falsehood, though he were to be shot to death with arrows. On the other hand, I consider, that he told it with all the aforesaid circumstances, and that he could not, in so short a space, have framed so vast a machine of extravagancies : and if
this

adventure seems to be apocryphal, I am not in fault ; and so, without affirming it for true or false, I write it. Since, reader, you have discernment, judge as you see fit ; for I neither ought, nor can do any more : though it is held for certain, that, upon his death-bed, he retracted, and said, he had invented it only because it was of a piece, and squared with the adventures he had read of in his histories.

Then the translator goes on, saying :

THE scholar was astonished, no less at the boldness of *Sancho Pança*, than at the patience of his master, judging that the mildness of temper he then shewed sprung from the satisfaction he had just received in seeing his mistress *Dulcinea del Toboso*, tho' enchanted : for, had it not been so, *Sancho* said such words and things to him as richly deserved a cudgeling ; and in reality he thought *Sancho* had been a little too sawcy with his master : to whom the scholar said : For my part, Signor *Don Quixote*, I reckon the pains of my journey in your worship's company very well bestowed, having thereby gained four things. The first, your worship's acquaintance, which I esteem a great happiness. The second, my having learned what is enclosed in this cave of *Montesinos*, with the metamorphoses of *Guadiana*, and the lakes of *Ruydera*, which will serve me for my *Spanish Ovid* I have now in hand. The third is, to have learned the antiquity of card-playing, which was in use at least in the days of the emperor *Charles* the great, as may be gathered from the words your worship says *Durandarte* spoke, when, at the end of that great while *Montesinos* had been talking to him, he awaked, saying, Patience, and shuffle the cards : And this allusion to cards, and this way of speaking, he could not learn during his enchantment, but when he was in *France*, and in the days of the said emperor *Charles* the great ; and this remark comes pat for the other book I am upon, the supplement to *Polydore Virgil on the invention of antiquities* ; for I believe he has forgot to insert that of cards in his work, as I will now do in mine ; which

will be of great importance, especially as I shall alledge the authority of so grave and true an author as Signor *Durandarte*. The fourth is, the knowing with certainty the source of the river *Guadiana*, hitherto unknown. You are in the right, said *Don Quixote*: but I would fain know, if by the grace of god a licence be granted you for printing your books, which I doubt, to whom you intend to inscribe them? There are lords and grandees enough in *Spain*, to whom they may be dedicated, said the scholar. Not many, answered *Don Quixote*; not because they do not deserve a dedication, but because they will not receive one, to avoid lying under an obligation of making such a return as seems due to the pains and complaisance of the authors. I know a Prince ¹, who makes amends for what is wanting in the rest, with so many advantages, that, if I durst presume to publish them, perhaps, I might stir up envy in several noble breasts. But let this rest 'till a more convenient season, and let us now consider, where we shall lodge to-night. Not far from hence, answered the scholar, is an *Hermitage*, in which lives an hermit, who, they say, has been a soldier, and has the reputation of being a good christian, and very discreet, and charitable withal. Adjoining to the *Hermitage* he has a little house, built at his own cost; but, though small, it is large enough to receive guests. Has this same hermit any poultry? quoth *Sancho*. Few hermits are without, answered *Don Quixote*; for those in fashion now-a-days are not like those in the deserts of *Egypt*, who were clad with the leaves of the palm-tree, and lived upon roots of the earth. I would not be understood, as if, by speaking well of the latter, I reflected upon the former: I only mean, that the penances of our times do not come up to the austerities and strictness of those days. But this is no reason why they may not be all good: at least I take them to be so; and, at the worst, the hypocrite, who feigns himself good, does less hurt than the undisguised sinner.

While

¹ The Conde de Lemos, Don Pedro Fernandez de Castro,

While they were thus discoursing, they perceived a man on foot coming towards them, walking very fast, and switching on a mule, loaden with launces and halberts. When he came up to them, he saluted them, and passed on. *Don Quixote* said to him : Hold, honest friend ; methinks you go faster than is convenient for that mule. I cannot stay, answered the man ; for the arms you see I am carrying are to be made use of to-morrow, so that I am under a necessity not to stop, and so adieu : but if you would know for what purpose I carry them, I intend to lodge this night at the inn beyond the *Hermitage*, and, if you travel the same road, you will find me there, where I will tell you wonders ; and once more god be with you. Then he pricked on the mule at that rate, that *Don Quixote* had no time to enquire what wonders they were he designed to tell them : and, as he was not a little curious, and always tormented with the desire of hearing new things, he gave orders for their immediate departure, resolving to pass the night at the inn, without touching at the *Hermitage*, where the scholar would have had them lodge. This was done accordingly : they mounted, and all three took the direct road to the inn, at which they arrived a little before night-fall. The scholar desired *Don Quixote* to make a step to the *Hermitage*, to drink one draught : and scarce had *Sancho Pança* heard this, when he steered *Dapple* towards the *Hermitage*, and the same did *Don Quixote* and the scholar : but *Sancho's* ill luck, it seems, would have it, that the hermit was not at home, as they were told by an under-hermit, whom they found in the *Hermitage*. They asked him for the dearest wine : he answered, his master had none ; but, if they wanted cheap water, he would give them some with all his heart. If I wanted water, answered *Sancho*, there are wells enough upon the road, from whence I might have satisfied myself. O for the wedding of *Camacho*, and the plenty of *Don Diego's* house ! how often shall I feel the want of you !

They quitted the *Hermitage*, and spurred on toward the inn, and soon overtook a lad, who was walking

before them in no great haste. He carried a sword upon his shoulder, and upon it a roll or bundle, seemingly of his cloaths, in all likelihood breeches or trouzers, a cloak and a shirt or two. He had on a tattered velvet jacket lined with satin, and his shirt hung out. His stockings were of silk, and his shoes square-toed after the court-fashion. He seemed to be about eighteen or nineteen years of age, of a chearful countenance, and in appearance very active of body. He went on singing couplets, to divert the fatigue of the journey ; and, when they overtook him, he had just done singing one, the last words whereof the scholar got by heart ; which they say were these :

*For want of the pence to the wars I must go :
Ah ! had I but money, it would not be so.*

The first, who spoke to him, was *Don Quixote*, who said : you travel very airily, young spark ; pray, whither so fast ? let us know, if you are inclined to tell us. To which the youth answered : My walking so airily is occasioned by the heat and by poverty, and I am going to the wars. How by poverty ? demanded *Don Quixote* : by the heat it may very easily be. Sir, replied the youth, I carry in this bundle a pair of velvet trouzers, fellows to this jacket : if I wear them out upon the road, I cannot do myself credit with them in the city, and I have no money to buy others ; and for this reason, as well as for coolness, I go thus, 'till I come up with some companies of foot, which are not twelve leagues from hence, where I will lift myself, and shall not want baggage-conveniencies to ride in, 'till we come to the place of embarkation, which, they say, is to be at *Carthage* : besides, I choose the king for my master and lord, whom I had rather serve in the war, than any paltry fellow at court. And, pray, Sir, have you any post ? said the scholar. Had I served some grandee, or other person of distinction, answered the youth, no doubt I should ; for, in the service of good masters, it is no uncommon thing to rise from the servant's hall to the post of ensign
or

or captain, or to get some good pension : but poor I was always in the service of strolling fellows or foreigners, whose wages and board-wages are so miserable and slender, that one half is spent in paying for starching a ruff ; and it would be looked upon as a miracle, if one page adventurer in a hundred should get any tolerable preferment. But, tell me, friend, quoth *Don Quixote* ; is it possible, that, in all the time you have been in service, you could not procure a livery ? I had two, answered the page : but as he, who quits a monastery before he professes, is stripped of his habit, and his old cloaths are returned him, just so my masters did by me, and gave me back mine ; for, when the business was done, for which they came to court, they returned to their own homes, and took back the liveries they had given only for shew. A notable *Espilarcheria*¹, as the *Italians* say, quoth *Don Quixote* : however, look upon it as an earnest of good-fortune, that you have quitted the court with so good an intention ; for there is nothing upon earth more honourable nor more advantageous, than first to serve god, and then your king and natural lord, especially in the exercise of arms, by which one acquires at least more honour, if not more riches, than by letters, as I have often said : for though letters have founded more great families than arms, still there is I know not what that exalts those who follow arms above those who follow letters, with I know not what splendor attending them, which sets them above all others. And bear in mind this piece of advice, which will be of great use to you, and matter of consolation in your distresses ; and that is, not to think of what adverse accidents may happen ; for the worst that can happen is death, and when death is attended with honour, the best that can happen is to die. That valorous *Roman* emperor, *Julius Cæsar*, being asked which was the best kind of death, answered, that which was sudden, unthought-of, and unforeseen ; and though he answered like a heathen, and a stranger to the knowledge of the true god, nevertheless, with respect to human infirmity,

¹ A sneaking trick of a pitiful beggarly fellow.

he said well. For, supposing you are killed, in the first skirmish or action, either by a cannon-shot, or the blowing up of a mine, what does it signify? all is but dying, and the business is done. According to *Terence*, the soldier makes a better figure dead in battle, than alive and safe in flight; and the good soldier gains just as much reputation, as he shews obedience to his captains, and to those who have a right to command him. And take notice, son, that a soldier had better smell of gunpowder than of musk; and if old age overtakes you in this noble profession, though lame and maimed, and full of wounds, at least it will not overtake you without honour, and such honour as poverty itself cannot deprive you of; especially now that care is taking to provide for the maintenance of old and disabled soldiers, who ought not to be dealt with, as many do by their *Negro* slaves, when they are old, and past service, whom they discharge and set at liberty, and, driving them out of their houses, under pretence of giving them their freedom, make them slaves to hunger, from which nothing but death can deliver them. At present I will say no more: but get up behind me upon this horse of mine, 'till we come to the inn, and there you shall sup with me, and to-morrow morning pursue your journey, and god give you as good speed as your intentions deserve.

The page did not accept of the invitation of riding behind *Don Quixote*, but did that of supping with him at the inn; and here, it is said, *Sancho* muttered to himself: The lord bless thee for a master! is it possible, that one, who can say so many, and such good things, as he has now done, should say he saw the extravagant impossibilities he tells of the cave of *Montesinos*? Well, we shall see what will come of it.

By this time they arrived at the inn, just at night-fall, and *Sancho* was right glad to see his master take it for an inn indeed, and not for a castle, as usual. They were scarce entered, when *Don Quixote* asked the landlord for the man with the launces and halberts: he

he answered, that he was in the stable looking after his mule. The scholar and *Sancho* did the same by their beasts, giving *Rozinante* the best manger and the best place in the stable.

C H A P. VIII.

Wherein is begun the braying adventure, with the pleasant one of the puppet-player, and the memorable divinations of the divining ape.

DON QUIXOTE's cake was dough, as the saying is, till he could hear and learn the wonders promised to be told him by the conductor of the arms; and therefore he went in quest of him where the innkeeper told him he was; and, having found him, he desired him by all means to tell him, what he had to say as to what he had enquired of him upon the road. The man answered: The account of my wonders must be taken more at leisure, and not on foot: suffer me, good Sir, to make an end of taking care of my beast, and I will tell you things, which will amaze you. Let not that be any hinderance, answered *Don Quixote*; for I will help you: and so he did, winnowing the barley, and cleaning the manger; a piece of humility, which obliged the man readily to tell him what he desired: and setting himself upon a stone bench without the inn door, and *Don Quixote* by his side, the scholar, the page, *Sancho Pança*, and the inn-keeper, serving as his senate and auditory, he began in this manner.

You must understand, gentlemen, that, in a town four leagues and a half from this inn, it happened, that an alderman, through the artful contrivance (too long to be told) of a wench his maid-servant, lost his ass; and though the said alderman used all imaginable diligence to find him, it was not possible. Fifteen days were passed, as public fame says, since the ass was missing, when, the losing alderman being in the market-place, another alderman of the same town

said

said to him : Pay me for my good news, gossip ; for your ass has appeared. Most willingly, neighbour, answered the other ; but let us know where he has been seen ? In the mountain, answered the finder ; I saw him this morning, without a pannel, or any kind of furniture about him, and so lank, that it would grieve one to see him : I would fain have driven him before me, and brought him to you ; but he is already become so wild, and so shy, that, when I went near him, away he galloped, and ran into the most hidden part of the mountain. If you have a mind we should both go to seek him, let me but put up this ass at home, and I will return instantly. You will do me a great pleasure, quoth he of the ass, and I will endeavour to pay you in the same coin. With all these circumstances, and after the very same manner, is the story told by all, who are thoroughly acquainted with the truth of the affair. In short, the two aldermen, on foot, and hand in hand, went to the mountain ; and coming to the very place where they thought to find the ass, they found him not, nor was he to be seen any where thereabouts, though they searched diligently after him. Perceiving then, that he was not to be found, quoth the alderman that had seen him to the other : Hark you, gossip ; a device is come into my head, whereby we shall assuredly discover this animal, though he were crept into the bowels of the earth, not to say of the mountain ; and it is this : I can bray marvellously well, and if you can do so never so little, conclude the business done. Never so little, say you, neighbour ? quoth the other ; before god, I yield the precedence to none, no, not to asses themselves. We shall see that immediately, answered the second alderman ; for I propose that you shall go on one side of the mountain, and I on the other, and so we shall traverse and encompass it quite round ; and every now and then you shall bray, and so will I ; and the ass will most certainly hear and answer us, if he be in the mountain. To which the master of the ass answered : Verily, neighbour, the device is excellent, and worthy of your great ingenuity.

nuity. So parting according to agreement, it fell out, that they both brayed at the same instant, and each of them, deceived by the braying of the other, ran to seek the other, thinking the as had appeared; and, at sight of each other, the loser said: Is it possible, gossip, that it was not my as that brayed? No, it was I, answered the other. I tell you then, quoth the owner, that there is no manner of difference, as to the braying part, between you and an as; for in my life I never saw or heard any thing more natural. These praises and compliments, answered the author of the stratagem, belong rather to you than to me, gossip; for, by the god that made me, you can give the odds of two brays to the greatest and most skilful brayer of the world; for the tone is deep, the sustaining of the voice ¹ in time and measure, and the cadences frequent and quick: in short, I own myself vanquished, I give you the palm, and yield up the standard of this rare ability. I say, answered the owner, I shall value and esteem myself the more henceforward, and shall think I know something, since I have some excellence; for, though I fancied I brayed well, I never flattered myself I came up to the pitch you are pleased to say. I tell you, answered the second, there are rare abilities lost in the world, and that they are ill bestowed on those, who know not how to employ them to advantage. Ours, quoth the owner, excepting in cases like the present, cannot be of service to us; and, even in this, god grant they prove of any benefit.

This said, they separated again, and fell anew to their braying; and at every turn they deceived each other, and met again, 'till they agreed, as a counter-sign to distinguish their own brayings from that of the as, that they should bray twice together, one immediately after the other. Thus doubling their brayings, they made the tour of the mountain; but no answer from the stray as, no not by signs: indeed
how

¹ *Lo sostenido de la voz.* It means the lengthening or holding out of a note.

how could the poor creature answer, whom they found in the thickest of the wood half devoured by wolves? At sight whereof the owner said: I wondered indeed he did not answer; for, had he not been dead, he would have brayed at hearing us, or he were no ass: nevertheless, gossip, I take the pains I have been at in seeking him to be well bestowed, though I have found him dead, since I have heard you bray with such a grace. It is in a good hand ¹, gossip, answered the other; for if the abbot sings well, the novice comes not far behind him.

Hereupon they returned home, disconsolate and hoarse, and recounted to their friends, neighbours, and acquaintance, all that had happened in the search after the ass; each of them exaggerating the other's excellence in braying. The story spread all over the adjacent villages; and the devil, who sleeps not, as he loves to sow and promote squabbles and discord wherever he can, raising a bustle in the wind, and great chimeras out of next to nothing, so ordered and brought it about, that the people of other villages, upon seeing any of the folks of our town, would presently fall a braying, as it were hitting us in the teeth with the braying of our aldermen. The boys gave into it, which was all one as putting it into the hands and mouths of all the devils in hell; and thus braying spread from one town to another, insomuch that the natives of the town of *Bray* ² are as well known as white folks are distinguished from black. And this unhappy jest has gone so far, that the mocked have often sallied out in arms against the mockers, and given them battle, without king or rook ³, or fear or shame, being able to prevent it. To-morrow, I believe, or next day, those of our town, the brayers, will take the field against the people of another village, about two leagues from ours, being one of those which persecute us most. And, to be well provided for

¹ Alluding to the civility of complimenting another to drink first.

² *Pueblo del Rebüeno*.

³ Alluding to the game of chess,

for them, I have brought the launces and halberds you saw me carrying. And these are the wonders I said I would tell you; and if you do not think them such, I have no other for you. And here the honest man ended his story.

At this juncture there came in at the door of the inn a man clad from head to foot in shamois leather, hose, doublet, and breeches, and said with a loud voice: Master host, have you any lodging? for here comes the divining ape, and the puppet-shew of *Melisendra's* deliverance. Body of me, quoth the inn-keeper, what! master *Peter* here! we shall have a brave night of it. I had forgot to tell you, that this same master *Peter* had his left eye, and almost half his cheek, covered with a patch of green *Tafeta*, a sign that something ailed all that side of his face. The landlord went on saying: Welcome, master *Peter*! where is the ape and the puppet-shew? I do not see them. They are hard-by, answered the all-shamois man; I came before, to see if there be any lodging to be had. I would turn out the duke *d'Alva* himself, to make room for master *Peter*, answered the inn-keeper: let the ape and the puppets come; for there are guests this evening in the inn, who will pay for seeing the shew, and the abilities of the ape. So be it in god's name, answered he of the patch; and I will lower the price, and reckon myself well paid with only bearing my charges. I will go back, and hasten the cart with the ape and the puppets. And immediately he went out of the inn. Then *Don Quixote* asked the landlord, what master *Peter* this was, and what puppets, and what ape he had with him? To which the landlord answered: He is a famous puppet-player, who has been a long time going up and down these parts of *Mancha* in *Arragon*, with a shew of *Melisendra* and the famous *Don Gayferos*; which is one of the best stories, and the best performed, of any that has been seen hereabouts these many years. He has also an ape, whose talents exceed those of all other apes, and even those of men: for, if any thing is asked him, he

he listens to it attentively, and then, leaping upon his master's shoulder, and putting his mouth to his ear, he tells him the answer to the question that is put to him; which master *Peter* presently repeats aloud. It is true, he tells much more concerning things past, than things to come; and, though he does not always hit right, yet for the most part he is not much out; so that we are inclined to believe he has the devil within him. He has two reals for each question, if the ape answers; I mean, if his master answers for him, after the ape has whispered him in the ear: and therefore it is thought this same master *Peter* must be very rich. He is, besides, a very gallant man (as they say in *Italy*) and a boon companion; and lives the merriest life in the world. He talks more than six, and drinks more than a dozen, and all this at the expence of his tongue, his ape, and his puppets.

By this time master *Peter* was returned, and in the cart came the puppets, and a large ape without a tail, and its buttocks bare as a piece of felt; but not ill-favoured. *Don Quixote* no sooner espied him, but he began to question him, saying: Master diviner, pray, tell me, what fish do we catch, and what will be our fortune? See, here are my two reals, bidding *Sancho* to give them to master *Peter*, who answered for the ape, and said: Signor, this animal makes no answer, nor gives any information, as to things future: he knows something of the past, and a little of the present. Odds bobs, quoth *Sancho*, I would not give a brass farthing to be told what is past of myself; for who can tell that better than myself? and for me to pay for what I know already, would be a very great folly. But since he knows things present, here are my two reals, and let good-man ape tell me what my wife *Teresa Pança* is doing, and what she is employed about? Master *Peter* would not take the money, saying: I will not be paid before-hand, nor take your reward 'till I have done you the service; and giving with his right hand two or three claps on his left shoulder, at one spring the ape jumped upon it, and, laying its mouth

to his ear, grated its teeth and chattered apace ; and, having made this grimace for the space of a *Credo*, at another skip down it jumped on the ground, and presently master *Peter* ran and kneeled before *Don Quixote*, and, embracing his legs, said : These legs I embrace, just as if I embraced the two pillars of *Hercules*, O illustrious reviver of the long-forgotten order of chivalry ! O never sufficiently extolled knight, *Don Quixote de la Mancha* ! Thou spirit to the faint-hearted, stay to those that are falling, arm to those that are already fallen, staff and comfort to all that are unfortunate ! *Don Quixote* was thunder-struck, *Sancho* in suspense, the scholar surprized, the page astonished, the braying-man in a gaze, the inn-keeper confounded, and, lastly, all amazed that heard the expressions of the puppet-player, who proceeded, saying : And thou, O good *Sancho Pança*, the best squire to the best knight in the world, rejoice, that thy good wife *Teresa* is well, and this very hour is dressing a pound of flax ; by the same token that she has by her left side a broken-mouthed pitcher, which holds a pretty scantling of wine, with which she cheers her spirits at her work. I verily believe it, answered *Sancho* ; for she is a blessed one, and, were she not a little jealous, I would not change her for the giantess *Andandona*, who, in my master's opinion, was a very accomplished woman, and a special house-wife ; and my *Teresa* is one of those, who will make much of themselves, though it be at the expence of their heirs. Well, quoth *Don Quixote*, he, who reads much and travels much, sees much and knows much. This, I say, because what could have been sufficient to persuade me, that there are apes in the world that can divine, as I have now seen with my own eyes ? Yes, I am that very *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, that this good animal has said, though he has expatiated a little too much in my commendation. But, be I as I will, I give thanks to heaven that endued me with a tender and compassionate disposition of mind, always inclined to do good to every body, and hurt to no body. If I had money, said the page, I would ask master ape what will befall me in my intended.

tended expedition. To which master *Peter*, who was already got up from kneeling at *Don Quixote's* feet, answered: I have already told you, that this little beast does not answer as to things future: but, did he answer such questions, it would be no matter whether you had money or not; for, to serve Signor *Don Quixote* here present, I would wave all advantages in the world. And now, because it is my duty, and to do him a pleasure besides, I intend to put in order my puppet-shew, and entertain all the folks in the inn gratis. The inn-keeper, hearing this, and above measure over-joyed, pointed out a convenient place for setting up the shew; which was done in an instant.

Don Quixote was not entirely satisfied with the ape's divinations, not thinking it likely that an ape should divine things either future or past: and so, while master *Peter* was preparing his shew, *Don Quixote* drew *Sancho* aside to a corner of the stable, where, without being over-heard by any body, he said to him: Look you, *Sancho*, I have carefully considered the strange ability of this ape, and, by my account, I find that master *Peter* his owner must doubtless have made a tacit or express pact with the devil. Nay, quoth *Sancho*, if the pack be express from the devil, it must needs be a very footy pack: but what advantage would it be to this same master *Peter* to have such a pack? You do not understand me, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*: I only mean, that he must certainly have made some agreement with the devil to infuse this ability into the ape, whereby he gets his bread; and, after he is become rich, he will give him his soul, which is what the universal enemy of mankind aims at. And what induces me to this belief, is, finding that the ape answers only as to things past or present, and the knowledge of the devil extends no farther: for he knows the future only by conjecture, and not always that; for it is the prerogative of god alone, to know times and seasons, and to him nothing is past or future, but every thing present. This being so, as it really is, it is plain the ape talks in the style of the devil; and I wonder he has not been accused to the
inquisition,

inquisition, and examined by torture, 'till he confessed by virtue of what, or of whom, he divines: for it is certain this ape is no astrologer; and neither his master nor he know how to raise one of those figures called judiciary, which are now so much in fashion in *Spain*, that you have not any servant-maid, page, or cobbler, but presumes to raise a figure, as if it were a knave of cards from the ground¹; thus destroying, by their lying and ignorant pretences, the wonderful truth of the science. I know a certain lady, who asked one of these figure-raisers, whether a little lap-dog she had would breed, and how many, and of what colour, the puppies would be. To which master astrologer, after raising a figure, answered, that the bitch would pup, and have three whelps, one green, one carnation, and the other mottled, upon condition she should take dog between the hours of eleven and twelve at noon or night, and that it were on a *Monday* or a *Saturday*. Now it happened, that the bitch died some two days after of a surfeit, and master figure-raiser had the repute in the town of being as consummate an astrologer as the rest of his brethren. But for all that, quoth *Sancho*, I should be glad your worship would desire master *Peter* to ask his ape, whether all be true, which besel you in the cave of *Montefinos*, because, for my own part, begging your worship's pardon, I take it to be all sham and lyes, or at least a dream. It may be so, answered *Don Quixote*: but I will do what you advise me, since I myself begin to have some kind of scruples about it.

While they were thus confabulating, master *Peter* came to look for *Don Quixote*, to tell him the shew was ready, desiring he would come to see it, for it deserved it. *Don Quixote* put *Sancho's* question to him, and desired him to ask his ape presently, whether certain things, which besel him in the cave of *Montefinos*, were dreams or realities; for, to his thinking, they seemed to be a mixture of both. Master *Peter*,
without

¹ The allusion is to a superstition among gamesters, in use every where, especially at games of chance, namely, to pick up from the ground the first card they light on, and set their money on it.

without answering a word, went and fetched his ape, and, placing him before *Don Quixote* and *Sancho*, said: Look you, master ape, this knight would know, whether certain things, which befel him in a cave, called that of *Montefinos*, were real or imaginary. And making the usual signal, the ape leaped upon his left shoulder; and seeming to chatter to him in his ear, master *Peter* presently said: The ape says, that part of the things your worship saw, or which befel you, in the said cave, are false, and part likely to be true: and this is all he knows, and no more, as to this question; and if your worship has a mind to put any more to him, on *Friday* next he will answer to every thing you shall ask him; for his virtue is at an end for the present, and will not return 'till that time. Did not I tell you, quoth *Sancho*, it could never go down with me, that all your worship said, touching the adventures of the cave, was true, no, nor half of it? The event will shew that, *Sancho*, answered *Don Quixote*; for time, the discoverer of all things, brings every thing to light, though it lie hid in the bowels of the earth; and let this suffice at present, and let us go see honest master *Peter's* shew; for I am of opinion there must be some novelty in it. How, some? quoth master *Peter*: sixty thousand novelties are contained in this master-piece of mine: I assure you, Signor *Don Quixote*, it is one of the top things to be seen that the world affords at this day; *Operibus credite & non verbis*; and let us to work; for it grows late, and we have a great deal to do, to say, and to shew.

Don Quixote and *Sancho* obeyed, and came where the shew was set out, stuck round with little wax-candles, so that it made a delightful and shining appearance. Master *Peter*, who was to manage the figures, placed himself behind the shew, and before it stood his boy, to serve as an interpreter and expounder of the mysteries of the piece. He had a white wand in his hand, to point to the several figures as they entered. All the folks in the inn being placed, some standing opposite to the shew, and *Don Quixote*, *Sancho*, the page, and the scholar, seated in the best places,

ces, the *Drugger-man* ¹ began to say, what will be heard or seen by those, who will be at the pains of hearing or seeing the following chapter.

C H A P. IX.

Wherein is continued the pleasant adventure of the puppet-player, with sundry other matters in truth sufficient/y good.

TYRIANS and Trojans were all silent ² : I mean, that all the spectators of the shew hung upon the mouth of the declarer ³ of its wonders, when from within the scene they heard the sound of a number of drums and trumpets, and several discharges of artillery ; which noise was soon over, and immediately the boy raised his voice, and said : This true history, here represented to you, gentlemen, is taken word for word from the *French* chronicles and *Spanish* ballads, which are in every body's mouth, and sung by the boys up and down the streets. It treats, how *Don Gayferos* freed his wife *Melisendra*, who was a prisoner in *Spain*, in the hands of the *Moors*, in the city of *Sanfuenna*, now called *Saragossa* ; and there you may see how *Don Gayferos* is playing at tables, according to the ballad :

*Gayferos now at tables plays,
Forgetful of his lady dear &c.*

That personage, who appears yonder with a crown on his head, and a scepter in his hands, is the emperor *Charles the great*, the supposed father of *Melisendra* ; who, being vexed to see the indolence and negligence of his son-in-law, steps forward to chide him ; and, pray, mark with what vehemency and earnestness he rates him, that one would think he had a mind to give him half a dozen raps over the pate with his scepter ;

¹ *El Truxaman*. So the Turks call an interpreter.

² *Conticuere omnes*. Virg. *Æn.* l. 2. init.

³ *Narrantis conjux pendet ab ore viri*. Ovid. *Epist.* l. v. 30.

ter : yea, there are authors, who say he actually gave them, and found ones too : and, after having said sundry things about the danger his honour run, in not procuring the liberty of his spouse, it is reported, he said to him : *I have told you enough of it ; look to it.* Pray observe, gentlemen, how the emperor turns his back, and leaves *Don Gayferos* in a fret. See him now impatient with choler, flinging about the board and pieces, and calling hastily for his armour ; desiring *Don Orlando* his cousin to lend him his sword *Durindana* ; and then how *Don Orlando* refuses to lend it him, offering to bear him company in that arduous enterprize : but the valorous enraged will not accept of it, saying, that he alone is able to deliver his spouse, though she were thrust down to the deepest center of the earth. Hereupon he goes in to arm himself for setting forward immediately. Now, gentlemen, turn your eyes toward that tower, which appears yonder, which you are to suppose to be one of the *Moorish* towers of *Saragossa*, now called the *Aljaferia* ¹ ; and that lady, who appears at yon balcony in a *Moorish* habit, is the peerless *Melifendra*, casting many a heavy look toward the road that leads to *France*, and fixing her imagination upon the city of *Paris* and her husband, her only consolation in her captivity. Now behold a strange incident, the like perhaps never seen. Do you not see yon *Moor*, who stealing along softly, and step by step, with his finger on his mouth, comes behind *Melifendra* ? Behold how he gives her a smacking kiss full on her lips : observe the haste she makes to spit, and wipe her mouth with her white shift-sleeves ; and how she takes on, and tears her beauteous hair for vexation, as if that was to blame for the indignity. Observe that grave *Moor* in yonder gallery : he is *Marfilio*, the king of *Sanfuenna* ; who, seeing the insolence of the *Moor*, though he is a relation of his, and a great favourite, orders him to be seized immediately, and two hundred stripes to be given him, and to be led through the most frequented streets of the city, with criers before to publish his crime,

¹ The old royal palace, now that of the *Inquisition*.

crime ¹, and the officers of justice with their rods behind : and now behold the officers coming out to execute the sentence, almost as soon as the fault is committed : for, among the *Moors*, there is no citation of the party, nor copies of the process, nor delay of justice, as among us.

Here *Don Quixote* said with a loud voice : Boy, boy, on with your story in a straight line, and leave your curves and transversals ; for, to come at the truth of a fact, there is often need of proof upon proof. Master *Peter* also from behind said : Boy, none of your flourishes, but do what the gentleman bids you ; for that is the surest way : sing your song plain, and seek not for counter-points ; for they usually crack the strings. I will, master, answered the boy, and proceeded, saying :

The figure you see there on horseback, muffled up in a *Gascoign* cloak, is *Don Gayferos* himself, to whom his spouse, already revenged on the impudence of the enamoured *Moor*, shews herself from the battlements of the tower, with a calmer and more sedate countenance, and talks to her husband, believing him to be some passenger ; with whom she holds all that discourse and dialogue in the ballad, which says :

*If towards France your course you bend,
Let me intreat you, gentle friend,
Make diligent enquiry there
For Gayferos my husband dear.*

The rest I omit, because length begets loathing. It is sufficient to observe how *Don Gayferos* discovers himself, and, by the signs of joy she makes, you may perceive she knows him, and especially now that you see she lets herself down from the balcony, to get on horseback behind her good spouse. But, alas poor lady ! the border of her under petticoat has caught hold on one of the iron rails of the balcony, and there she

¹ In *Spain*, as the malefactors pass along the streets, it is cried before them—Such a one to be whipped, hanged, &c. for such a crime.

hangs dangling in the air, without being able to reach the ground. But see how merciful heaven sends relief in the greatest distresses; for now comes *Don Gayferos*, and, without regarding whether the rich petticoat be torn, or not, lays hold of her, and brings her to the ground by main force; and then at a spring sets her behind him on his horse astride like a man, bidding her hold very fast, and clasp her arms about his shoulders, 'till they cross and meet over his breast, that she may not fall; because the lady *Melifendra* was not used to that way of riding. See how the horse, by his neighings, shews he is pleased with the burthen of his valiant master and his fair mistress. And see how they turn their backs, and go out of the city, and how merrily and joyfully they take the way to *Paris*. Peace be with ye, O peerless pair of faithful lovers! may ye arrive in safety at your desired country, without fortune's laying any obstacle in the way of your prosperous journey! may the eyes of your friends and relations behold ye enjoy in perfect peace the remaining days (and may they be like *Nestor's*) of your lives! Here again master *Peter* raised his voice, and said: Plainness, boy; do not encumber yourself; for all affectation is naught. The interpreter made no answer, but went on, saying: There wanted not some idle eyes, such as espy every thing, to see *Melifendra's* getting down and then mounting; of which they gave notice to king *Marfilio*, who immediately commanded to sound the alarm: and pray take notice what a hurry they are in; how the whole city shakes with the ringing of bells in the steeples of the mosques.

Not so, quoth *Don Quixote*; master *Peter* is very much mistaken in the business of the bells; for the *Moors* do not use bells, but kettle-drums, and a kind of dulcimers, like our waits: and therefore to introduce the ringing of bells in *Sanfuenna* is a gross absurdity. Which master *Peter* overhearing, he left off ringing, and said: Signor *Don Quixote*, do not criticize upon trifles, nor expect that perfection, which is not to be found in these matters. Are there not a thousand comedies acted almost every where, full of

as many improprieties and blunders, and yet they run their career with great success, and are listened to not only with applause, but with admiration? Go on, boy, and let folks talk; for, so I fill my bag, I care not if I represent more improprieties than there are atoms in the sun. You are in the right, quoth *Don Quixote*; and the boy proceeded:

See what a numerous and brilliant cavalry sallies out of the city in pursuit of the two catholic lovers; how many trumpets sound, how many dulcimers play, and how many drums and kettle-drums rattle. I fear they will overtake them, and bring them back tied to their own horse's tail, which would be a lamentable spectacle. *Don Quixote*, seeing such a number of *Moors*, and hearing such a din, thought proper to succour those that fled, and rising up said in a loud voice: I will never consent, while I live, that in my presence such an outrage as this be offered to so famous a knight and so daring a lover as *Don Gayferos*. Hold, base-born rabble, follow not, nor pursue after him; for, if you do, have at you. And so said, so done, he unsheathed his sword, and at one spring he planted himself close to the shew, and, with a violent and unheard-of fury, began to rain hacks and flashes upon the *Moorish* puppets, overthrowing some, and beheading others, laming this, and demolishing that: and, among a great many other strokes, he fetched one with such a force, that, if master *Peter* had not ducked and squatted down, he had chopped off his head with as much ease as if it had been made of sugar-paste. Master *Peter* cried out, saying: Hold, Signor *Don Quixote*, hold, and consider, that these figures, you throw down, maim, and destroy, are not real *Moors*, but only puppets made of paste-board: consider, signer that I am, that you are undoing me, and destroying my whole livelihood. For all that *Don Quixote* still laid about him, showering down, doubling and redoubling, fore-strokes and back-strokes, like hail. In short, in less than the saying two *credos*, he demolished the whole machine, hacking to pieces all the tackling and figures, king *Marsilio* being sorely wounded,

and the head and crown of the emperor *Charlemagne* cloven in two. The whole audience was in a consternation; the ape flew to the top of the house; the scholar was frightened, the page daunted, and even *Sancho* himself trembled mightily; for, as he swore after the storm was over, he had never seen his master in so outrageous a passion.

The general demolition of the machinery thus achieved, *Don Quixote* began to be a little calm, and said: I wish I had here before me, at this instant, all those who are not, and will not be, convinced, of how much benefit knights-errant are to the world: for, had I not been present, what would have become of good *Don Gayferos* and the fair *Melifendra*? I warrant ye, those dogs would have overtaken them by this time, and have offered them some indignity. When all is done, long live knight-errantry above all things living in the world! In god's name, let it live, and let me die, quoth master *Peter* at this juncture with a faintish voice, since I am so unfortunate, that I can say with king *Roderigo*¹: Yesterday I was sovereign of *Spain*, and to day have not a foot of land I can call my own. It is not half an hour ago, nor scarce half a minute, since I was master of kings and emperors, my stalls full of horses, and my trunks and sacks full of fine things; and now I am desolate and dejected, poor and a beggar, and, what grieves me most of all, without my ape, who, i'faith, will make my teeth sweat for it, before I get him again: and all through the inconsiderate fury of this Sir knight, who is said to protect orphans, redress wrongs, and do other charitable deeds; but in me alone, praised be the highest heavens for it, his generous intention has failed. In fine, it could only be the *knight of the sorrowful figure*, who was destined thus to disfigure me and mine.

Sancho Pança was moved to compassion by what master *Peter* had spoken, and therefore said to him: Weep not, master *Peter*, nor take on so; for you break my heart, and I assure you my master *Don Quixote* is so catholic

¹ The last king of the *Goths* in *Spain*, overthrown by the *Moors*.

catholic and scrupulous a christian, that, if he comes to reflect that he has done you any wrong, he knows how, and will certainly make you amends with interest. If Signor *Don Quixote*, quoth master *Peter*, would but repay me part of the damage he has done me, I should be satisfied, and his worship would discharge his conscience; for no body can be saved, who withholds another's property against his will, and does not make restitution. True, quoth *Don Quixote*; but as yet I do not know that I have any thing of yours, master *Peter*. How! answered master *Peter*: what but the invincible force of your powerful arm scattered and annihilated these relicks, which lie up and down on this hard and barren ground? Whose were their bodies but mine? and how did I maintain myself but by them? Now am I entirely convinced, quoth *Don Quixote* at this juncture, of what I have often believed before, that those enchanters, who persecute me, are perpetually setting shapes before me as they really are, and presently putting the change upon me, and transforming them into whatever they please. I protest to you, gentlemen that hear me, that whatever has passed at this time seemed to me to pass actually and precisely so: I took *Melifendra* to be *Melifendra*; *Don Gayferos*, *Don Gayferos*; *Marfilio*, *Marfilio*; and *Charlemagne*, *Charlemagne*. This it was that inflamed my choler; and, in compliance with the duty of my profession as a knight-errant, I had a mind to assist and succour those who fled; and with this good intention I did what you just now saw: if things have fallen out the reverse, it is no fault of mine, but of those my wicked persecutors; and notwithstanding this mistake of mine, and though it did not proceed from malice, yet will I condemn myself in costs. See, master *Peter*, what you must have for the damaged figures, and I will pay it you down in current and lawful money of *Castile*. Master *Peter* made him a low bow, saying; I expected no less from the unexampled christianity of the valorous *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, the true succourer and support of all the needy and distressed: and let master *Inn-keeper* and the great *San-*

cho be umpires and appraisers, between your worship and me, of what the demolished figures are or might be worth. The inn-keeper and *Sancho* said they would; and then master *Peter*, taking up *Marfilio* king of *Saragossa*, which lay upon the floor without a head, he said: You see how impossible it is to restore this king to his pristine state, and therefore I think, with submission to better judgments, you must award me for his death and destruction four reals and a half. Proceed, quoth *Don Quixote*. Then for this that is cleft from top to bottom, continued master *Peter*, taking up the emperor *Charlemagne*, I think five reals and a quarter little enough to ask. Not very little, quoth *Sancho*. Nor very much, replied the inn-keeper: but split the difference, and set him down five reals. Give him the whole five and a quarter, quoth *Don Quixote*; for, in such a notable mischance as this, a quarter more or less is not worth standing upon: and make an end, master *Peter*; for it grows towards supper-time, and I have some symptoms of hunger upon me. For this figure, quoth master *Peter*, which wants a nose and an eye, and is the fair *Melifendra*, I must have, and can abate nothing of, two reals and twelve maravedis. Nay, said *Don Quixote*, the devil must be in it, if *Melifendra* be not, by this time, with her husband, at least upon the borders of *France*: for methought the horse they rode upon seemed to fly rather than gallop; and therefore do not pretend to sell me a cat for a coney, shewing me here *Melifendra* nose-less, whereas, at this very instant, probably, she is solacing herself at full stretch with her husband in *France*. God help every one with his own, master *Peter*, let us have plain dealing, and proceed. Master *Peter*, finding that *Don Quixote* began to warp, and was returning to his old bent, had no mind he should escape him so, and therefore said to him: Now I think on it, this is not *Melifendra*, but some one of her waiting-maids, and so with sixty maravedis I shall be well enough paid, and very well contented. Thus he went on, setting a price upon the several broken figures, which the arbitrators afterwards moderated to the satisfaction of both parties.

The

The whole amounted to forty reals and three quarters: and over and above all this, which *Sancho* immediately disbursed, master *Peter* demanded two reals for the trouble he should have in catching his ape. Give him them, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, not for catching the ape¹, but to drink. I would give two hundred to any one that could tell me for certain, that *Donna Melisendra* and Signor *Don Gayferos* are at this time in *France*, and among their friends. No body can tell us that better than my ape, said master *Peter*: but the devil himself cannot catch him now; though I suppose his affection for me, or hunger, will force him to come to me at night; and to-morrow is a new day, and we shall see one another again.

In conclusion, the bustle of the puppet-shew was quite over, and they all supped together in peace and good company, at the expence of *Don Quixote*, who was liberal to the last degree. He who carried the launces and halberds went off before day, and, after it was light, the scholar and the page came to take their leaves of *Don Quixote*, the one in order to return home, and the other to pursue his intended journey; and *Don Quixote* gave him a dozen reals to help to bear his charges. Master *Peter* had no mind to enter into any more tell me's and I will tell you's with *Don Quixote*, whom he knew perfectly well; and therefore up he got before the sun, and gathering up the fragments of his shew, and taking his ape, away he went in quest of adventures of his own. The inn-keeper, who knew not *Don Quixote*, was equally in admiration at his madness and liberality. In short, *Sancho*, by order of his master, payed him very well; and, about eight in the morning, bidding him farewell, they left the inn, and went their way, where we will leave them, to give place to the relating several other things.

M 4

¹ Here, in the original, is a jingle of words (*no para tomar, el mono, sino la mona*) which it is impossible to preserve in the translation. *Mono* signifies an ape, and *mona*, in familiar language, is used for being drunk, or drunkenness: perhaps, because men in liquor often play apish tricks.

272 *The LIFE and EXPLOITS of*
things necessary to the better understanding this famous history.

C H A P. X.

Wherein is related who master Peter and his ape were ; with the ill success Don Quixote had in the adventure of the braying, which he finished not as he wished and intended.

CID HAMET, the chronicler of this grand history, begins this chapter with these words : *I swear as a catholic christian* : To which his translator says, that *Cid Hamet's* swearing as a catholic christian, he being a *Moor*, as undoubtedly he was, meant nothing more than that, as the catholic christian, when he swears, does, or ought to speak and swear the truth, so did he, in writing of *Don Quixote*, and especially in declaring who master *Peter* was, with some account of the divining ape, who surprized all the villages thereabouts with his divinations. He says then, that whoever has read the former part of this history, must needs remember that same *Gines de Passamonte*, to whom, among other galley-slaves, *Don Quixote* gave liberty in the fable mountain ; a benefit, for which afterward he had small thanks, and worse payment, from that mischievous and misbehaving crew. This *Gines de Passamonte*, whom *Don Quixote* called *Ginesillo de Parapilla*, was the person who stole *Sancho Pança's Dapple* ; and the not particularizing the when, nor the how, in the first part, through the neglect of the printers, made many ascribe the fault of the press to want of memory in the author. But in short *Gines* stole him, while *Sancho Pança* was asleep upon his back, making use of the same trick and device that *Brunelo* did, who, while *Sacripante* lay at the siege of *Albraca*, stole his horse from between his legs ; and afterwards *Sancho* recovered him, as has been already related. This *Gines* then (being afraid of falling into the hands of justice, which was in pursuit of him, in order to chastize him
for

for his numberless rogueries and crimes, which were so many and so flagrant, that he himself wrote a large volume of them) resolved to pass over to the kingdom of *Arragon*, and, covering his left eye, took up the trade of puppet playing and legerdemain, both of which he perfectly understood. It fell out, that lighting upon some christian slaves redeemed from *Barbary*, he bought that ape, which he taught, at a certain signal, to leap up on his shoulder, and mutter something, or seem to do so, in his ear. This done, before he entered any town, to which he was going with his shew and his ape, he informed himself in the next village, or where he best could, what particular things had happened in such and such a place, and to whom; and bearing them carefully in his memory, the first thing he did, was, to exhibit his shew, which was sometimes of one story, and sometimes of another, but all pleasant, gay, and generally known. The shew ended, he used to propound the abilities of his ape, telling the people, he divined all that was past and present; but as to what was to come, he did not pretend to any skill therein. He demanded two reals for answering each question, and to some he afforded it cheaper, according as he found the pulse of his clients beat; and coming sometimes to houses, where he knew what had happened to the people that lived in them, though they asked no question, because they would not pay him, he gave the signal to his ape, and presently said, he told him such and such a thing, which tallied exactly with what had happened; whereby he gained infallible credit, and was followed by every body. At other times, being very cunning, he answered in such a manner, that his answers came pat to the questions; and as no body went about to sift, or press him to tell how his ape divined, he gulled every body, and filled his pockets. No sooner was he come into the inn, but he knew *Don Quixote* and *Sancho*; which made it very easy for him to excite the wonder of *Don Quixote*, *Sancho*, and all that were present. But it would have cost him dear, had *Don Quixote* directed his hand a little lower, when he

274 *The LIFE and EXPLOITS of*

cut off king *Marfilio's* head, and destroyed all his cavalry, as is related in the foregoing chapter. This what offers concerning master *Peter* and his ape.

And, returning to *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, I say, he determined, before he went to *Saragossa*, first to visit the banks of the river *Ebro*, and all the parts thereabouts, since he had time enough and to spare before the tournaments began. With this design he pursued his journey, and travelled two days without lighting on any thing worth recording, 'till, the third day, going up a hill, he heard a great noise of drums, trumpets, and guns. At first he thought some regiment of soldiers was marching that way, and he clapped spurs to *Rozinante*, and ascended the hill to see them : and, being got to the top, he perceived, as he thought, in the valley beneath, above two hundred men armed with various weapons, as spears, cross-bows, partisans, halberds, and pikes, with some guns, and a great number of targets. He rode down the hill, and drew so near to the squadron, that he saw the banners distinctly, and distinguished their colours, and observed the devices they bore ; especially one upon a banner or pennant of white satin, whereon was painted to the life an ass, of the little *Sardinian* breed, holding up its head, its mouth open, and its tongue out, in the act and posture, as it were, of braying, and round it these two verses were written in large characters.

*The bailiffs twain
Bray'd not in vain.*

From this motto *Don Quixote* gathered, that these folks must belong to the braying town, and so he told *Sancho*, telling him also what was written on the banner. He said also, that the person, who had given an account of this affair, was mistaken in calling the two brayers aldermen, since, according to the motto, they were not aldermen, but bailiffs. To which *Sancho Pança* answered : That breaks no squares, Sir ; for it may very well be, that the aldermen, who brayed, might, in process of time, become bailiffs of their town,

town, and therefore may properly be called by both those titles ; though it signifies nothing to the truth of the story, whether the brayers were bailiffs or aldermen, so long as they both brayed ; for a bailiff is as likely to bray as an alderman. In conclusion, they found, that the town derided was sallied forth to attack another, which had laughed at them too much, and beyond what was fitting for good neighbours. *Don Quixote* advanced towards them, to the no small concern of *Sancho*, who never loved to make one in these kind of expeditions. Those of the Squadron received him amongst them, taking him for some one of their party. *Don Quixote*, lifting up his vizor, with an easy and graceful deportment, approached the ass-banner, and all the chiefs of the army gathered about him to look at him, being struck with the same admiration that every body was the first time of seeing him. *Don Quixote*, seeing them so intent upon looking at him, without any one's speaking to him, or asking him any question, resolved to take advantage of this silence, and, breaking his own, he raised his voice and said.

Good gentlemen, I earnestly entreat you not to interrupt a discourse I shall make to you, 'till you find it disgusts and tires you : for, if that happens, at the least sign you shall make, I will clap a seal on my lips, and a gag upon my tongue. They all desired him to say what he pleased ; for they would hear him with a very good will. With this licence *Don Quixote* proceeded, saying : I, gentlemen, am a knight errant, whose exercise is that of arms, and whose profession that of succouring those, who stand in need of succour, and relieving the distressed. Some days ago I heard of your misfortune, and the cause that induces you to take arms at every turn, to revenge yourselves on your enemies. And, having often pondered your business in my mind, I find, that, according to the laws of duel, you are mistaken in thinking yourselves affronted : for no one person can affront a whole town, unless it be by accusing them of treason conjointly, as not knowing in particular who committed the treason,
of

276 *The LIFE and EXPLOITS of*

of which he accuses them. An example of this we have in *Don Diego Ordonnez de Lara*, who defied the whole people of *Zamora*, because he did not know, that *Velido Delfos* alone had committed the treason of killing his king; and therefore he challenged them all, and the revenge and answer belonged to them all: though it is very true, that Signor *Don Diego* went somewhat too far, and greatly exceeded the limits of challenging; for he needed not have defied the dead, the waters, the bread, or the unborn, nor several other particularities mentioned in the challenge. But let that pass; for, when choler overflows its dam, the tongue has no father, governor, nor bridle, to restrain it. This being so then, that a single person cannot affront a kingdom, province, city, republick, or a whole town, it is clear, there is no reason for your marching out to revenge such an affront, since it is really none. Would it not be pretty indeed, if those of the watch-making business¹ should endeavour to knock every body's brains out, who calls them by their trade? and would it not be pleasant, if the cheese-mongers, the costar-mongers, the fish-mongers, and soap-boilers, with those of several other names and appellations, which are in every boy's mouth, and common among the vulgar; would it not be fine indeed, if all these notable folks should be ashamed of their businesses, and be perpetually taking revenge, and making sackbuts of their swords upon every quarrel, though never so trivial? No, no, god neither permits nor wills it. Men of wisdom, and well ordered commonwealths, ought to take arms, draw their swords, and hazard their lives and fortunes, upon four accounts: First, to defend the catholic faith; secondly, to defend their lives, which is agreeable to the natural and divine law; thirdly, in defence of their honour, family, or estate; and fourthly, in the service of their king, in a just war: and, if we may add a fifth (which may be

¹ Literally, *the people of the town of Reloxa*; an imaginary town, formed from the word *Relox*, a *clock* or *watch*. The phrase is humorous in the original, and well adapted to the occasion, but would not have been intelligible in the translation.

be ranked with the second) it is, in the defence of their country. To these five capital causes several others might be added, very just and very reasonable, and which oblige us to take arms. But to have recourse to them for trifles, and things rather subjects for laughter and pastime, than for affronts, looks like acting against common sense. Besides, taking an unjust revenge (and no revenge can be just) is acting directly against the holy religion we profess, whereby we are commanded to do good to our enemies, and to love those that hate us; a precept, which, though seemingly difficult, is really not so, to any but those, who have less of god than of the world, and more of the flesh than of the spirit: for *Jesus Christ*, true god and man, who never lyed, nor could, nor can lye, and who is our legislator, has told us, *his yoke is easy, and his burden light*: and therefore he would not command us any thing impossible to be performed. So that, gentlemen, you are bound to be quiet and pacified by all laws both divine and human.

The devil fetch me, quoth *Sancho* to himself, if this master of mine be not a tologue¹; or, if not, he is as like one, as one egg is like another. *Don Quixote* took breath a little, and perceiving that they still stood attentive, he had a mind to proceed in his discourse, and had certainly done so, had not *Sancho's* acuteness interposed: who, observing that his master paused a while, took up the cudgels for him, saying: My master, *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, once called *the knight of the sorrowful figure*, and now *the knight of the lions*, is a sage gentleman, and understands *Latin* and the vulgar tongue like any batchelor of arts; and, in all he handles or advises, proceeds like an expert soldier, having all the laws and statutes of what is called *Duel* at his fingers ends: and so there is no more to be done, but to govern yourselves by his direction, and I will bear the blame if you do amiss: besides, you are but just told, how foolish it is to be ashamed to hear one bray. I remember, when I was a boy, I brayed as often as I pleased, without any body's

¹ *Tologo*: a blunder of *Sancho's* for *Teologo* a *Divine*.

body's hindering me, and with such grace and propriety, that, whenever I brayed, all the asses of the town brayed: and for all that I did not cease to be the son of my parents, who were very honest people; and, though for this rare ability I was envied by more than a few of the proudest of my neighbours, I cared not two farthings. And to convince you, that I speak the truth, do but stay and hearken: for this science, like that of swimming, once learned, is never forgotten. Then, laying his hands to his nostrils, he began to bray so strenuously, that the adjacent valleys resounded again. But one of those who stood close by him, believing he was making a mock of them, lifted up a pole he had in his hand, and gave him such a polt with it, as brought *Sancho Pança* to the ground. *Don Quixote*, seeing *Sancho* so evil intreated, made at the striker with his lance: but so many interposed, that it was impossible for him to be revenged: on the contrary, finding a shower of stones come thick upon him, and a thousand cross-bows presented, and as many guns levelled at him, he turned *Rozinante* about, and, as fast as he could gallop, got out from among them, recommending himself to god with all his heart, to deliver him from this danger, fearing, at every step, lest some bullet should enter at his back and come out at his breast; and at every moment he fetched his breath, to try whether it failed him or not. But those of the squadron were satisfied with seeing him fly for it, and did not shoot after him. As for *Sancho*, they set him again upon his ass, scarce come to himself, and suffered him to follow his master: not that he had sense to guide him; but *Dapple* naturally followed *Rozinante's* steps, not enduring to be a moment from him. *Don Quixote*, being got a good way off, turned about his head, and saw that *Sancho* followed; and, finding that no body pursued him, he stopped 'till he came up. Those of the squadron stay'd there 'till night, and, the enemy not coming forth to battle, they returned to their own homes, joyful and merry: and, had they known the practice of the ancient *Greeks*, they would have erected a trophy in that place.

C H A P. XI.

Of things, which Ben-engeli says he, who reads them, will know, if he reads them with attention.

WHEN the valiant flies, it is plain he is over-matched; for it is the part of the wise to reserve themselves for better occasions. This truth was verified in *Don Quixote*, who, giving way to the fury of the people, and to the evil intentions of that resentful squadron, took to his heels, and without bethinking him of *Sancho*, or of the danger in which he left him, got as far off as he deemed sufficient for his safety. *Sancho* followed him athwart his beast, as has been said. At last he came up to him, having already recovered his senses; and, at coming up, he fell from *Dapple* at the feet of *Rozinante*, all in anguish, all bruised, and all beaten. *Don Quixote* alighted to examine his wounds; but, finding him whole from head to foot, with much choler he said: In an unlucky hour, *Sancho*, must you needs shew your skill in braying: where did you learn, that it was fitting to name a halter in the house of a man that was hanged? To the music of braying what counter-point could you expect but that of a cudgel? Give god thanks, *Sancho*, that, instead of crossing your back with a cudgel, they did not make the sign of the cross on you with a scymitar. I am not now in a condition to answer, replied *Sancho*; for methinks I talk through my shoulders: let us mount, and be gone from this place: as for braying, I will have done with it; but I shall not with telling, that knights-errant fly, and leave their faithful squires to be beaten to powder by their enemies. To retire is not to fly, answered *Don Quixote*; for you must know, *Sancho*, that the valour, which has not prudence for its basis, is termed rashness, and the exploits of the rash are ascribed rather to their good fortune, than their courage. I confess I did retire, but fled not; and herein I imitated sundry valiant

liant persons, who have reserved themselves for better times; and of this histories are full of examples, which, being of no profit to you, or pleasure to me, I omit at present.

By this time *Sancho* was mounted, with the assistance of *Don Quixote*, who likewise got upon *Rozinante*; and so fair and softly they took the way toward a grove of poplar, which they discovered about a quarter of a league off. *Sancho* every now and then fetched most profound sighs, and doleful groans. *Don Quixote* asking him the cause of such bitter moaning, he answered, that he was in pain from the lowest point of his back-bone to the nape of his neck, in such manner that he was ready to swoon. The cause of this pain, said *Don Quixote*, must doubtless be, that the pole they struck you with, being a long one, took in your whole back, where lie all the parts that give you pain, and, if it had reached farther, it would have pained you more. Before god, quoth *Sancho*, your worship has brought me out of a grand doubt, and explained it in very fine terms. Body of me, was the cause of my pain so hid, that it was necessary to tell me, that I felt pain in all those parts which the pole reached? If my ancles ached, you might not perhaps so easily guess, why they pained me: but to divine, that I am pained because beaten, is no great business. In faith, master of mine, other men's harms hang by a hair: I descry land more and more every day, and what little I am to expect from keeping your worship company¹; for if this bout you let me be basted, we shall return again, and a hundred times again, to our old blanket-tossing, and other follies; which, if this time they have fallen upon my back, the next they will fall upon my eyes. It would be much better for me, but that I am a barbarian, and shall never do any thing that is right while I live; I say again, it would be much better for me, to return to my

¹ Here again *Sancho* grows very sawcy, and his master very patient; for the *Don* had left him in the lurch somewhat too abruptly for his character of intrepid, and therefore bears all *Sancho* says.

my own house, and to my wife and children, to maintain and bring them up with the little god shall be pleased to give me, and not be following your worship through roads without a road, and pathless paths, drinking ill, and eating worse. Then for sleeping, measure out, brother squire, seven foot of earth, and, if that is not sufficient, take as many more: it is in your own power to dish up the mess, and stretch yourself out to your heart's content ¹. I wish I may see the first, who set on foot knight-errantry, burnt to ashes, or at least the first that would needs be squire to such ideots as all the knights-errant of former times must have been. I say nothing of the present; for, your worship being one of them, I am bound to pay them respect, and because I know your worship knows a point beyond the devil in all you talk and think.

I would lay a good wager with you, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, that now you are talking, and without interruption, you feel no pain in all your body. Talk on, son of mine, all that comes into your thoughts, and whatever comes uppermost; for, so you feel no pain, I shall take pleasure in the very trouble your impertinencies give me: and if you have so great a desire to return home to your wife and children, god forbid I should hinder you. You have money of mine in your hands: see how long it is since we made this third sally from our town, and how much you could or ought to get each month, and pay yourself. When I served *Thomas Carrasco*, father of the batchelor *Sampson Carrasco*, whom your worship knows full well, said *Sancho*, I got two ducats a month, besides my victuals: with your worship I cannot tell what I may get; though I am sure it is a greater drudgery to be squire to a knight-errant, than servant to a farmer; for, in fine, we, who serve husbandmen, though we labour never so hard in the day-time, let the worst come to the worst, at night we have a supper from the pot, and we sleep in a bed, which is more than I have done since I have served your worship, excepting the short

¹ The very language of *Don Quixote* himself, when he talked of arms and letters in the inn.

short time we were at *Don Diego de Miranda's* house, the good cheer I had with the skimming of *Camacho's* pots, and what I eat, drank, and slept, at *Basilus's* house. All the rest of the time I have lain on the hard ground, in the open air, subject to what people call the inclemencies of heaven, living upon bits of bread and scraps of cheese, and drinking water, sometimes from the brook, and sometimes from the fountain, such as we met with up and down by the way.

I confess, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, that all you say is true: How much think you I ought to give you more than *Thomas Carrasco* gave you? I think, quoth *Sancho*, if your worship adds two reals a month, I shall reckon myself well paid. This is to be understood as to wages due for my labour; but as to the promise your worship made of bestowing on me the government of an island, it would be just and reasonable you should add six reals more; which make thirty in all. It is very well, replied *Don Quixote*: according to the wages you have allotted yourself, it is five and twenty days since we sallied from our town; reckon, *Sancho*, in proportion, and see what I owe you, and pay yourself, as I have already said, with your own hand. Body of me, quoth *Sancho*, your worship is clean out in the reckoning: for, as to the business of the promised island, we must compute from the day you promised it me, to this present hour. Why, how long is it since I promised it you? said *Don Quixote*. If I remember right, answered *Sancho*, it is about twenty years and three days, more or less. *Don Quixote* gave himself a good clap on the forehead with the palm of his hand, and began to laugh very heartily, and said: Why, my rambling up and down the fable mountain, with the whole series of our sallies, scarce take up two months, and say you, *Sancho*, it is twenty years since I promised you the island? Well, I perceive you have a mind your wages should swallow up all the money you have of mine: If it be so, and such is your desire, from henceforward I give it you, and much good may it do you; for so I may get rid of so worthless a squire, I shall be glad to be left poor
and

and pennylefs. But tell me, perverter of the fquirely ordinances of knight-errantry, where have you feen or read, that any fquire to a knight-errant ever prefumed to article with his mafter, and fay, fo much and fo much *per* month you muft give me to ferve you? Launch, launch out, cut-throat, fcountrel, and hobgoblin (for thou art all thefe) launch, I fay, into the *mare magnum* of their histories, and, if you can find, that any fquire has faid, or thought, what you have now faid, I will give you leave to nail it on my fore-head, and over and above to write fool upon my face in capitals. Turn about the bridle, or halter, of *Dapple*, and be gone home; for one fingle ftep farther you go not with me. O bread ill beftowed! O promifes ill placed! O man, that haft more of the beaft than of the human creature! Now when I thought of settling you, and in fuch a way, that, in fpite of your wife, you fhould have been ftiled your honour, do you now leave me? now are you for going, when I have taken a firm and effectual refolution to make you lord of the beft ifland in the world? But, as you yourfelf have often faid, honey is not for an afs's mouth. An afs you are, an afs you will continue to be, and an afs you will die; for I verily believe, your life will reach its final period, before you will perceive or be convinced that you are a beaft.

Sancho looked very wiftfully at *Don Quixote* all the while he was thus rating him: and fo great was the compunction he felt, that the tears flood in his eyes, and, with a doleful and faint voice, he faid: Dear Sir, I confeß, that, to be a compleat afs, I want nothing but a tail: If your worfhip will be pleafed to put me on one, I fhall deem it well placed, and will ferve your worfhip in the quality of an afs, all the remaining days of my life. Pardon me, your worfhip, have pity on my ignorance, and confider, that, if I talk much, it proceeds more from infirmity than malice: but, He who errs and mends, himfelf to god, commends. I fhould wonder, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, if you did not mingle fome little proverb with

284 *The LIFE and EXPLOITS of*

with your talk. Well, I forgive you, upon condition of your amendment, and that henceforward you shew not yourself so fond of your interest, but that you endeavour to enlarge your heart, take courage, and strengthen your mind to expect the accomplishment of my promises, which, though they are deferred, are not therefore desperate. *Sancho* answered, he would, though he should draw force from his weakness. Hereupon they entered the poplar grove. *Don Quixote* accommodated himself at the foot of an elm, and *Sancho* at the foot of a beech; for this kind of trees and such like have always feet, but never hands. *Sancho* passed the night uneasily, the cold renewing the pain of his bruises. *Don Quixote* passed it in his wonted meditations: but for all that they both slept, and at break of day they pursued their way towards the banks of the famous *Ebro*, where there befel them what shall be related in the ensuing chapter.

C H A P. XII.

Of the famous adventure of the enchanted bark.

IN two days, after leaving the poplar grove, *Don Quixote* and *Sancho*, travelling as softly as foot could fall, came to the river *Ebro*, the sight of which gave *Don Quixote* great pleasure, while he saw and contemplated the verdure of its banks, the clearness of its waters, the smoothness of its current, and the abundance of its liquid chrystal: which chearful prospect brought to his remembrance a thousand amorous thoughts; and particularly he mused upon what he had seen in the cave of *Montefinos*: for though master *Peter's* ape had told him, that part of those things was true, and part false, he inclined rather to believe all true than false, quite the reverse of *Sancho*, who held them all for falshood itself. Now, as they sauntered along in this manner, they perceived a small bark, without oars, or any sort of tackle, tied to the trunk of a tree, which grew on the brink of the river. *Don Quixote* looked round about him every way,

way, and, seeing no body at all, without more ado alighted from *Rozinante*, and ordered *Sancho* to do the like from *Dapple*, and to tie both the beasts very fast to the body of a poplar or willow, which grew there. *Sancho* asked the reason of this hasty alighting and tying. *Don Quixote* answered: You are to know, *Sancho*, that this vessel lies here for no other reason in the world but to invite me to embark in it, in order to succour some knight, or other person of high degree, who is in extreme distress: for such is the practice of enchanters in the books of chivalry, when some knight happens to be engaged in some difficulty, from which he cannot be delivered, but by the hand of another knight. Then, though they are distant from each other two or three thousand leagues, and even more, they either snatch him up in a cloud, or furnish him with a boat to embark in; and, in less than the twinkling of an eye, they carry him, through the air, or over the sea, whither they list, and where his assistance is wanted. So that, O *Sancho*, this bark must be placed here for the self-same purpose: and this is as true, as that it is now day; and, before it be spent, tie *Dapple* and *Rozinante* together, and the hand of god be our guide; for I would not fail to embark, though barefooted friars themselves should intreat me to the contrary¹. Since it is so, answered *Sancho*, and that your worship will every step be running into these same (how shall I call them?) extravagancies, there is no way but to obey, and bow the head, giving heed to the proverb: Do what your master bids you, and sit down by him at table. But for all that, as to what pertains to the discharge of my conscience, I must warn your worship, that to me this same boat seems not to belong to the enchanted, but to some fishermen upon the river; for here they catch the best shads in the world.

All this *Sancho* said while he was tying the cattle, leaving them to the protection and care of enchanters,
with

¹ In *Spain*, so great is the reverence for those dirty gentlemen, that it is next to impious to refuse compliance with any thing they request.

with sufficient grief of his soul. *Don Quixote* bid him be in no pain about forsaking those beasts; for he, who was to carry themselves through ways and regions of such longitude, would take care to feed them. I do not understand your logitudes, said *Sancho*, nor have I heard such a word in all the days of my life. Longitude, replied *Don Quixote*, means length, and no wonder you do not understand it; for you are not bound to know *Latin*; though some there are, who pretend to know it, and are quite as ignorant as yourself. Now they are tied, quoth *Sancho*, what must we do next? What? answered *Don Quixote*: why, bless ourselves, and weigh anchor; I mean, embark ourselves, and cut the rope wherewith the vessel is tied. And, leaping into it, *Sancho* following him, he cut the cord, and the boat fell off by little and little from the shore; and when *Sancho* saw himself about a couple of yards from the bank, he began to quake, fearing he should be lost: but nothing troubled him more than to hear his ass bray, and to see *Rozinante* struggling to get loose; and he said to his master: The ass brays as bemoaning our absence, and *Rozinante* is endeavouring to get loose, to throw himself into the river after us. O dearest friends, abide in peace, and may the madness, which separates you from us, converted into a conviction of our error, return us to your presence: and here he began to weep so bitterly, that *Don Quixote* grew angry, and said: What are you afraid of, cowardly creature? What weep you for, heart of butter? Who pursues, who hurts you, soul of a house-rat? Or what want you, poor wretch, in the midst of the bowels of abundance? Art thou, peradventure, trudging barefoot over the *Riphean* mountains? No, but seated upon a bench, like an archduke, sliding easily down the stream of this charming river, whence in a short space we shall issue out into the boundless ocean. But doubtless we are got out already, and must have gone at least seven or eight hundred leagues. If I had here an *Astro-labe*, to take the elevation of the pole, I would tell
you

you how many we have gone; though either I know little, or we are already past, or shall presently pass, the equinoctial line, which divides and cuts the two opposite poles at equal distance. And when we arrive at that line your worship speaks of, quoth *Sancho*, how far shall we have travelled? A great way, replied *Don Quixote*: for, of three hundred and sixty degrees, contained in the terraqueous globe, according to the computation of *Ptolemy*, the greatest geographer we know of, we shall have travelled one half, when we come to the line I told you of. By the lord, quoth *Sancho*, your worship has brought a very pretty fellow, that same *Tolmy* (how d'ye call him?) with his *amputation*, to vouch the truth of what you say. *Don Quixote* smiled at *Sancho's* blunders as to the name and computation of the geographer *Ptolemy*, and said: You must know, *Sancho*, that one of the signs, by which the *Spaniards*, and those who embark at *Cadiz* for the *East-Indies*, discover whether they have passed the equinoctial line I told you of, is, that all the lice upon every man in the ship die, not one remaining alive; nor is one to be found in the vessel, though they would give its weight in gold for it: and therefore, *Sancho*, pass your hand over your thigh, and, if you light upon any thing alive, we shall be out of this doubt, and, if not, we have passed the line. I believe nothing of all this, answered *Sancho*: but for all that I will do as your worship bids me, though I do not know what occasion there is for making this experiment, since I see with my own eyes, that we are not got five yards from the bank, nor fallen two yards below our cattle: for yonder stand *Rozinante* and *Dapple* in the very place where we left them; and, taking aim as I do now¹, I vow to god we do not stir nor move an ant's pace. *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, make the trial I bid you, and take no further care; for you know not what things colures are, nor what are lines, parallels, zodiacks, eclipticks, poles, solstices, equinoctials, planets, signs, points, and

¹ *Sancho*, aiming, as with a gun, at some mark on the shore, could perceive what way the boat was making.

and measures, of which the celestial and terrestrial globes are composed: for, if you knew all these things, or but a part of them, you would plainly perceive what parallels we have cut, what signs we have seen, and what constellations we have left behind us, and are just now leaving. And once more I bid you feel yourself all over, and fish; for I, for my part, am of opinion, you are as clean as a sheet of paper, smooth and white. *Sancho* carried his hand softly and gently towards his left ham, and then lifted up his head, and, looking at his master, said: Either the experiment is false, or we are not arrived where your worship says, not by a great many leagues. Why, quoth *Don Quixote*, have you met with something then? Ay, several somethings, answered *Sancho*, and, shaking his fingers, he washed his whole hand in the river, down whose current the boat was gently gliding, not moved by any secret influence, nor by any concealed enchanter, but merely by the stream of the water, then smooth and calm.

By this time they discovered certain large water-mills standing in the midst of the river, and scarce had *Don Quixote* espied them, when he said with a loud voice to *Sancho*: O friend, behold, yonder appears the city, castle, or fortress, in which some knight lies under oppression, or some queen, infanta, or princess in evil plight; for whose relief I am brought hither. What the devil of a city, fortress, or castle do you talk of, Sir? quoth *Sancho*: do you not perceive, that they are mills standing in the river for the grinding of corn? Peace, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*; for, though they seem to be mills, they are not so: I have already told you, that enchantments transform and change all things from their natural shape. I do not say, they change them really from one to another being, but only in appearance, as experience shewed us in the transformation of *Dulcinea*, the sole refuge of my hopes.

The boat, being now got into the current of the river, began to move a little faster than it had done hitherto. The millers seeing it coming adrift with the
the

the stream, and that it was just going into the mouth of the swift stream of the mill-wheels, several of them ran out in all haste with long poles to stop it; and, their faces and cloaths being covered with meal, they made but an ill appearance, and calling out aloud said: Devils of men, where are ye going? are ye desperate, that ye have a mind to drown yourselves, or be ground to pieces by the wheels? Did I not tell you, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, at this juncture, that we are come where I must demonstrate how far the valour of my arm extends? look what a parcel of murderers and felons come out against me: see what hobgoblins to oppose us, and what ugly countenances to scare us. Now ye shall see, rascals. And, standing up in the boat, he began to threaten the millers aloud, saying: Ill led and worse advised scoundrels, set at liberty and free the person you keep under oppression in this your fortress or prison, whether of high or low degree: for I am *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, otherwise called *the knight of the lions*, for whom, by divine appointment, the putting an happy end to this adventure is reserved. And, so saying, he clapped his hand to his sword, and began to fence with it in the air against the millers, who, hearing, but not understanding, these foolish flourishes, set themselves with their poles to stop the boat, which was just entering into the stream and eddy of the wheels. *Sancho* fell upon his knees, and prayed to heaven devoutly to deliver him from so apparent a danger; which it did by the diligence and agility of the millers, who, setting their poles against the boat, stopt it; though not so dexterously, but that they overset it, and tipped *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* into the water. It was well for *Don Quixote*, that he knew how to swim like a goose; nevertheless the weight of his armour carried him twice to the bottom; and had it not been for the millers, who threw themselves into the river, and, as it were, crained them both up, there had been *Troy* for them both¹.

¹ *Aquí fué Troya*, here stood *Troy*, is a Spanish proverb denoting something ruined or destroyed. The meaning therefore is, that they must have inevitably perished.

When they were dragged on shore, more wet than thirsty, *Sancho*, kneeling, with hands joined and eyes uplifted, beseeched god, in a long and devout prayer, to deliver him thenceforward from the daring desires and enterprizes of his master. And now came the fishermen, owners of the boat, which the mill-wheels had crushed to pieces, and, seeing it broke, they began to strip *Sancho*, and demand payment for it of *Don Quixote*, who, with great tranquillity, as if nothing had befallen him, told the millers and the fishermen, he would pay for the boat with all his heart, upon condition they should deliver up to him, free and without ransom, the person, or persons, who lay under oppression in their castle. What persons, or what castle do you mean, madman? answered one of the millers: would you carry off those, who come to grind their corn at our mills? Enough, thought *Don Quixote* to himself, it will be preaching in the desert, to endeavour, by intreaty, to prevail with such mob to do any thing that is honourable: and, in this adventure, two able enchanters must have engaged, the one frustrating what the other attempts, the one providing me a bark, and the other oversetting it: god help us! this world is nothing but machinations and tricks quite opposite one to the other: I can do no more. Then, looking towards the mills, he raised his voice, and said: Friends, whoever you are that are enclosed in this prison, pardon me, that, through my misfortune and yours, I cannot deliver you from your affliction: this adventure is kept and reserved for some other knight. Having said this, he compounded with the fishermen, and paid fifty reals for the boat, which *Sancho* disbursed much against his will, saying: A couple more of such embarkations will sink our whole capital. The fishermen and millers stood wondering at these two figures, so out of the fashion and semblance of other men, not being able to comprehend what *Don Quixote* drove at by his questions, and the discourse he held with them: and, looking upon them as madmen, they left them, and

betook

betook themselves to their mills, and the fishermen to their huts. *Don Quixote* and *Sancho*, like beasts themselves, returned to their beasts; and thus ended the adventure of the enchanted bark.

C H A P. XIII.

Of what befel Don Quixote with a fair huntress.

EXTREMELY melancholy, and out of humour, arrived at their cattle the knight and squire; especially *Sancho*, who was grieved to the very soul to touch the capital of the money, all that was taken from thence seeming to him to be so much taken from the very apples of his eyes. In conclusion, they mounted, without exchanging a word, and quitted the famous river; *Don Quixote* buried in the thoughts of his love, and *Sancho* in those of his preferment, which he thought, for the present, far enough off: for, as much a blockhead as he was, he saw well enough, that most, or all, of his master's actions were extravagancies, and waited for an opportunity, without coming to accounts or discharges, to walk off some day or other, and march home. But fortune ordered matters quite contrary to what he feared.

It fell out then, that, the next day, about sun-set, and at going out of a wood, *Don Quixote* cast his eyes over a green meadow, and saw people at the farther side of it: and, drawing near, he found they were persons taking the diversion of hawking. Drawing yet nearer, he observed among them a gallant lady upon a palfrey, or milk-white pad, with green furniture, and a side-saddle of cloth of silver. The lady herself also was arrayed in green, and her attire so full of fancy, and so rich, that fancy herself seemed transformed into her. On her left hand she carried a hawk; from whence *Don Quixote* conjectured she must be a lady of great quality, and mistress of all those sportsmen about her, as in truth she was: and so he said to *Sancho*: Run, son *Sancho*, and tell that lady of the palfrey and the hawk, that I, the knight of the lions,

lions, kiss the hands of her great beauty, and, if her highness gives me leave, I will wait upon her to kiss them, and to serve her to the utmost of my power, in whatever her highness shall command: and take heed, *Sancho*, how you speak, and have a care not to interlard your embassy with any of your proverbs. You have hit upon the interlarder, quoth *Sancho*: why this to me? as if this were the first time I had carried a message to high and mighty ladies in my life. Excepting that to the lady *Dulcinea*, replied *Don Quixote*, I know of none you have carried, at least none from me. That is true, answered *Sancho*; but a good paymaster needs no surety, and where there is plenty, dinner is not long a dressing: I mean, there is no need of advising me; for I am prepared for all, and have a smattering of every thing. I believe it, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*: go in a good hour, and god be your guide.

Sancho went off at a round rate, forcing *Dapple* out of his usual pace, and came where the fair huntress was; and alighting, and kneeling before her, he said: Beauteous lady, that knight yonder, called *the knight of the lions*, is my master, and I am his squire, called at home *Sancho Pança*. This same *knight of the lions*, who not long ago was called he *of the sorrowful figure*, sends by me to desire your grandeur would be pleased to give leave, that, with your liking, good-will, and consent, he may approach and accomplish his wishes, which, as he says, and I believe, are no other, than to serve your high-towering falconry and beauty: which, if your ladyship grant him, you will do a thing that will redound to your grandeur's advantage, and he will receive a most signal favour and satisfaction.

Truly, good squire, answered the lady, you have delivered your message with all the circumstances, which such embassies require: rise up; for it is not fit the squire of so renowned a knight as he of the *sorrowful figure* (of whom we have already heard a great deal in these parts) should remain upon his knees: rise, friend, and tell your master, he may come and welcome; for I, and the duke my spouse, are at his service

service in a country-seat, we have here hard by. *Sancho* rose up, in admiration as well at the good lady's beauty, as at her great breeding and courtesy, and especially at what she had said, that she had some knowledge of his master *the knight of the sorrowful figure*; and, if she did not call him *the knight of the lions*, he concluded it was, because he had assumed it so very lately. The duchess (whose title is not yet known) said to him: Tell me, brother squire, is not this master of yours the person, of whom there goes about a history in print, called, *The ingenious gentleman Don Quixote de la Mancha*, who has for mistress of his affections *Dulcinea del Toboso*? The very same, answered *Sancho*; and that squire of his, who is, or ought to be, in that same history, called *Sancho Pança*, am I, unless I was changed in the cradle, I mean in the press. I am very glad of all this, quoth the duchess: go, brother *Pança*, and tell your master, he is heartily welcome to my estates, and that nothing could happen to me, which could give me greater pleasure. With this agreeable answer, *Sancho*, infinitely delighted, returned to his master, to whom he recounted all that the great lady had said to him, extolling, in his rustic phrase, her beauty, her good humour, and her courtesy, to the skies. *Don Quixote*, putting on his best airs, seated himself handsomely in his saddle, adjusted his vizor, enlivened *Rozinante's* mettle, and with a genteel assurance advanced to kiss the duchess's hand; who, having caused the duke her husband to be called, had been telling him, while *Don Quixote* was coming up, the purport of *Sancho's* message: and they both, having read the first part of this history, and having learned by it the extravagant humour of *Don Quixote*, waited for him with the greatest pleasure, and desire to be acquainted with him, and a purpose of carrying on the humour, and giving him his own way, treating him like a knight-errant, all the while he should stay with them, with all the ceremonies usual in books of chivalry, which they had read, and were also very fond of.

By this time *Don Quixote* was arrived, with his beaver up; and making a shew of alighting, *Sancho* was hastening to hold his stirrop, but was so unlucky, that, in getting off from *Dapple*, his foot hung in one of the rope-stirrops, in such manner, that it was impossible for him to disentangle himself; but he hung by it with his face and breast on the ground. *Don Quixote*, who was not used to alight without having his stirrop held, thinking *Sancho* was come to do his office, threw his body off with a swing, and carrying with him *Rozinante's* saddle, which was ill girted, both he and the saddle came to the ground, to his no small shame, and many a heavy curse muttered between his teeth on the unhappy *Sancho*, who still had his leg in the stocks. The Duke commanded some of his sportsmen to help the knight and squire; who raised up *Don Quixote* in ill plight through this fall: and limping, and as well as he could, he made shift to go and kneel before the lord and lady. But the Duke would by no means suffer it: on the contrary, alighting from his horse, he went and embraced *Don Quixote*, saying: I am very sorry, Sir knight of the sorrowful figure, that your first arrival at my estate should prove so unlucky: but the carelessness of squires is often the occasion of worse mischances. It could not be accounted unlucky, O valorous prince, answered *Don Quixote*, though I had met with no stop 'till I had fallen to the bottom of the deep abyss: for the glory of having seen your highness would have raised me even from thence. My squire, god's curse light on him, is better at letting loose his tongue to say unlucky things, than at fastening a saddle to make it sit firm: but whether down or up, on foot or on horse-back, I shall always be at your highness's service, and at my lady duchess's your worthy consort, and worthy mistress of all beauty, and universal princess of courtesy. Softly, dear Signor *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, quoth the duke; for where my lady *Donna Dulcinea del Toboso* is, it is not reasonable other beauties should be praised.

Sancho

Sancho Pança was now got free from the noose, and happening to be near, before his master could answer, he said : It cannot be denied, but must be affirmed, that my lady *Dulcinea del Toboso* is very beautiful : but where we are least aware, there starts the hare. I have heard say, that what they call nature is like a potter, who makes earthen vessels, and he, who makes one handsome vessel, may also make two, and three, and a hundred. This I say, because, on my faith, my lady duchess comes not a whit behind my mistress the lady *Dulcinea del Toboso*. *Don Quixote* turned himself to the duchess, and said : I imagine, madam, that never any knight-errant in the world had a more prating, nor a more merry-conceited squire, than I have ; and he will make my words good, if your highness is pleased to make use of my service for some days. To which the duchess answered : I am glad to hear that honest *Sancho* is pleasant : It is a sign he is discreet ; for pleasantry and good humour, Signor *Don Quixote*, as your worship well knows, dwell not in dull noddles ; and since *Sancho* is pleasant and witty, from henceforward I pronounce him discreet. And a prate-apace, answered *Don Quixote*. So much the better, quoth the duchess ; for many good things cannot be expressed in few words, and, that we may not throw away all our time upon them, come on, great knight of the sorrowful figure. Of the lions, your highness should say, quoth *Sancho* ; the sorrowful figure is no more. Of the lions then let it be, continued the duke : I say, come on, Sir knight of the lions, to a castle of mine hard by, where you shall be received in a manner suitable to a person of so elevated a rank, and as the duchess and I are wont to receive all knights-errant, who come to it. By this time *Sancho* had adjusted and well girt *Rozinante's* saddle, and *Don Quixote*, mounting upon him, and the duke upon a very fine horse, they placed the duchess in the middle, and rode towards the castle. The duchess ordered *Sancho* to be near her, being mightily delighted with his conceits. *Sancho* was easily prevailed upon, and, wind-

ing himself in among the three, made a fourth in the conversation, to the great satisfaction of the duke and duchess, who looked upon it as a notable piece of good fortune, to entertain in their castle such a knight-errant, and such an erred-squire.

C H A P. XIV.

Which treats of many and great things.

EXCESSIVE was the joy, which *Sancho* conceived to see himself, in his thinking, a minion of the duchess's; expecting to find in her castle the same as at *Don Diego's* or *Basilus's*: for he was always a lover of good cheer, and consequently took every opportunity of regaling himself by the forelock, where, and whenever it presented. Now the history relates, that, before they came to the pleasure-house, or castle, the duke rode on before, and gave all his servants their cue in what manner they were to behave to *Don Quixote*; who arriving with the duchess at the castle-gate, immediately there issued out two lacqueys or grooms, clad in a kind of morning-gowns of fine crimson satin down to their heels; and taking *Don Quixote* in their arms, without being observed, said to him: Go, great Sir, and take our lady the duchess off her horse. *Don Quixote* did so, and great compliments passed between them thereupon. But in short the duchess's positiveness got the better, and she would not alight, nor descend from her palfrey, but into the duke's arms, saying, she did not think herself worthy to charge so grand a knight with so unprofitable a burthen. At length the duke came out, and took her off her horse; and at their entering into a large court-yard, two beautiful damsels came, and threw over *Don Quixote's* shoulders a large mantle of the finest scarlet, and in an instant all the galleries of the court-yard were crowned with men and women-servants, belonging to the duke and duchess, crying aloud: Welcome the flower and cream of knights-errant! and all or most of them sprinkled whole bottles

tles of sweet-scented waters upon *Don Quixote*, and on the duke and duchess; at all which *Don Quixote* wondered, and this was the first day that he was thoroughly convinced of his being a true knight-errant, and not an imaginary one, finding himself treated just as he had read knights-errant were in former times.

Sancho, abandoning *Dapple*, tacked himself close to the duchess, and entered into the castle: but, his conscience soon pricking him for leaving his ass alone, he approached a reverend *Duenna*, who, among others, came out to receive the duchess, and said to her in a whisper: Mistress *Gonzalez*, or, what is your duennaship's name? *Donna Rodriguez de Grijalva*, answered the *Duenna*: what would you please to have with me, brother? To which *Sancho* answered: Be so good, sweet heart, as to step to the castle-gate, where you will find a dapple ass of mine; and be so kind as to order him to be put, or put him yourself, into the stable; for the poor thing is a little timorous, and cannot abide to be alone by any means in the world. If the master be as discreet as the man, answered the *Duenna*, we are finely thriven. Go, brother, in an evil hour for you and him that brought you hither, and make account, you and your beast, that the *Duennas* of this house are not accustomed to such kind of offices. Why truly, answered *Sancho*, I have heard my master, who is the very mine-finder¹ of histories, relating the story of *Lancelot*, when he from *Britain* came, say, that ladies took care of his person, and *Duennas* of his horse; and, as to the particular of my ass, I would not change him for Signor *Lancelot's* steed. If you are a buffoon, brother, replied the *Duenna*, keep your jokes for some place where they may make a better figure, and where you may be paid for them; for from me you will get nothing but a fig for

N. 5.

them.

¹ *Zabori*. A discoverer of mines, and who has a share in the property. A child born between *Holy Thursday* noon, and *Good Friday* noon, supposed to see seven yards into the ground. It is a popish old wife's fable, first learned from the *Moors*, and still believed by the vulgar in *Spain* and *Portugal*.

them. That is pretty well however, answered *Sancho*; for I am sure then it will be a ripe one, there being no danger of your losing the game of your years for want of a trick¹. You son of a whore, cried the *Duenna*, all on fire with rage, whether I am old or no, to god I am to give an account, and not to you, rascal, garlick-eating stinkard. This she uttered so loud, that the duchess heard it, and turning about, and seeing the *Duenna* so disturbed, and her eyes red as blood, asked her with whom she was so angry? With this good man here, answered the *Duenna*, who has desired me in good earnest to go and set up an ass of his that stands at the castle-gate; bringing me for a precedent, that the same thing was done, I know not where, by one *Lancelot*, and telling me how certain ladies looked after him, and certain *Duennas* after his steed; and to mend the matter, in mannerly terms called me old woman. I should take that for the greatest affront that could be offered me, answered the duchess; and, speaking to *Sancho*, she said: Be assured, friend *Sancho*, that *Donna Rodriguez* is very young, and wears those veils more for authority and the fashion, than upon account of her years. May the remainder of those I have to live never prosper, answered *Sancho*, if I meant her any ill: I only said it, because the tenderness I have for my ass is so great, that I thought I could not recommend him to a more charitable person, than to *Signora Donna Rodriguez*. *Don Quixote*, who overheard all, said: Are these discourses, *Sancho*, fit for this place? Sir, answered *Sancho*, every one must speak of his wants, be he where he will. Here I bethought me of *Dapple*, and here I spoke of him; and if I had thought of him in the stable, I had spoken of him there. To which the duke said: *Sancho* is very much in the right, and is not to be blamed in any thing: *Dapple* shall have provender to his heart's content; and let *Sancho* take no farther care, for he shall be treated like his own person.

With these discourses, pleasing to all but *Don Quixote*, they mounted the stairs, and conducted *Don Quixote*

1 A metaphor from card-playing.

ote into a great hall, hung with rich tissue and cloth of gold and brocade. Six damsels unarmed him, and served him as pages, all instructed and tutored by the duke and duchess what they were to do, and how they were to behave towards *Don Quixote*, that he might imagine and see they used him like a knight-errant. *Don Quixote*, being unarmed, remained in his strait breeches, and shammy doublet, lean, tall, and stiff, with his jaws meeting, and kissing each other on the inside: such a figure, that, if the damsels who waited upon him had not taken care to contain themselves (that being one of the precise orders given them by their lord and lady) they had burst with laughing. They desired he would suffer himself to be undressed, and put on a clean shirt; but he would by no means consent, saying, that modesty was as becoming a knight-errant as courage. However he bade them give *Sancho* the shirt; and shutting himself up with him in a room, where stood a rich bed, he pulled off his cloaths, and put on the shirt; and, finding himself alone with *Sancho*, he said to him: Tell me, modern buffoon, and antique blockhead, do you think it a becoming thing to dishonour and affront a *Duenna* so venerable and so worthy of respect? Was that a time to think of *Dapple*? Or are these gentry likely to let our beasts fare poorly, who treat their owners so elegantly? For the love of god, *Sancho*, refrain yourself, and do not discover the grain, lest it should be seen of how coarse a country web you are spun. Look you, sinner, the master is so much the more esteemed, by how much his servants are civiler and better bred; and one of the greatest advantages great persons have over other men, is, that they employ servants as good as themselves. Do you not consider, pitiful thou, and unhappy me, that, if people perceive you are a gross peasant, or a ridiculous fool, they will be apt to think I am some cheat, or some knight of the sharpening order? No, no, friend *Sancho*, avoid, avoid these inconveniencies; for whoever sets up for a talker and a rallier, at the first trip, tumbles down into a disgraced buffoon. Bridle your tongue, consider,

and

300 *The LIFE and EXPLOITS of*

and deliberate upon your words, before they go out of your mouth; and take notice, we are come to a place, from whence, by the help of god, and the valour of my arm, we may depart bettered three or even five-fold ¹ in fortune and reputation. *Sancho* promised him faithfully to sew up his mouth, or bite his tongue, before he spoke a word that was not to the purpose, and well considered, as he commanded him, and that he need be under no pain as to that matter, for no discovery should be made to his prejudice by him.

Don Quixote then dressed himself, girt on his sword, threw the scarlet mantle over his shoulders, put on a green satin cap, which the damsels had given him, and thus equipped marched out into the great saloon, where he found the damsels drawn up in two ranks, as many on one side as the other, and all of them provided with an equipage for washing his hands, which they administered ² with many reverences and ceremonies. Then came twelve pages, with the gentleman-servant, to conduct him to dinner, where by this time the lord and lady were waiting for him. They placed him in the middle of them, and, with great pomp and majesty, conducted him to another hall, where a rich table was spread with four covers only. The duke and duchess came to the hall-door to receive him, and with them a grave ecclesiastic, one of those, who govern great men's houses; one of those, who, not being princes born, know not how to instruct those that are how to demean themselves as such; one of those, who would have the magnificence of the great measured by the narrowness of their own minds; one of those, who, pretending to teach those they govern to be frugal, teach them to be misers. One of this sort, I say, was the grave ecclesiastic, who came out with the duke to receive *Don Quixote*. A thousand polite compliments passed upon the occasion; and, taking *Don Quixote* between them, they went and

¹ Literally, in a tierce or a quint. An allusion to the game of picquet.

² It is the custom in *Italy* and *Spain* to bring water and a towel to strangers.

and sat down to table. The duke offered *Don Quixote* the upper-end, and, though he would have declined it, the importunities of the duke prevailed upon him to accept it. The ecclesiastic seated himself over-against him, and the duke and duchess on each side. *Sancho* was present all the while, surprized and astonished to see the honour those princes did his master, and, perceiving the many intreaties and ceremonies, which passed between the duke and *Don Quixote*, to make him sit down at the head of the table, he said: If your honours will give me leave, I will tell you a story of a passage that happened in our town concerning places. Scarce had *Sancho* said this, when *Don Quixote* began to tremble, believing, without doubt, he was going to say some foolish thing. *Sancho* observed, and understood him, and said: Be not afraid, Sir, of my breaking loose, or of my saying any thing that is not pat to the purpose: I have not forgotten the advice your worship gave me a while ago, about talking much or little, well or ill. I remember nothing, *Sancho*, answered *Don Quixote*: say what you will, so you say it quickly. What I would say, quoth *Sancho*, is very true, and, should it be otherwise, my master *Don Quixote*, who is present, will not suffer me to lye. Lye as much as you will for me, *Sancho*, replied *Don Quixote*; I will not be your hindrance: but take heed what you are going to say. I have so heeded and reheeded it, quoth *Sancho*, that all is as safe as the repique in hand ¹, as you will see by the operation. It will be convenient, said *Don Quixote*, that your honours order this blockhead to be turned out of doors; for he will be making a thousand foolish blunders. By the life of the duke, quoth the duchess, *Sancho* shall not stir a jot from me: I love him much; for I know he is mighty discreet. Many such years, quoth *Sancho*, may your holiness live, for the good opinion you have of me, though it is not in me: but the tale I would tell is this.

A certain

¹ Alluding to the game of picquet, in which the repique may be safe against the greatest cards in appearance.

A certain gentleman of our town, very rich, and of a good family—for he was descended from the *Alamos* of *Medina del Campo*, and married *Donna Mencia de Quinones*, who was daughter of *Don Alonzo de Marannon*, knight of the order of *St. James*, who was drowned in the *Herradura*; about whom there happened that quarrel in our town some years ago, in which, as I take it, my master *Don Quixote* was concerned, and *Tommy* the mad-cap, son of *Balvaastro* the smith, was hurt—Pray, good master of mine, is not all this true? Speak, by your life, that these gentlemen may not take me for some lying prating fellow. Hitherto, said the ecclesiastic, I take you rather for a prater, than for a liar: but henceforward I know not what I shall take you for. You produce so many evidences, and so many tokens, that I cannot but say, quoth *Don Quixote*, it is likely you tell the truth: go on, and shorten the story; for you take the way not to have done in two days. He shall shorten nothing, quoth the duchess; and, to please me, he shall tell it his own way, though he have not done in six days; and should it take up so many, they would be to me the most agreeable of any I ever spent in my life. I say then, Sirs, proceeded *Sancho*, that this same gentleman, whom I know as well as I do my right hand from my left (for it is not a bow-shot from my house to his) invited a farmer, who was poor, but honest, to dinner. Proceed, friend, said the ecclesiastic, at this period; for you are going the way with your tale not to stop 'till you come to the other world. I shall stop before we get half way thither, if it pleases god, answered *Sancho*: and so I proceed. This same farmer, coming to the said gentleman-inviter's house—god rest his soul, for he is dead and gone, by the same token it is reported he died like an angel; for I was not by, being at that time gone a reaping to *Tembleque*. Pr'ythee, son, said the ecclesiastic, come back quickly from *Tembleque*, and, without burying the gentleman (unless you have a mind to make more burials) make an end of your tale. The business then, quoth *Sancho*, was this, that they being ready to sit down to table——me-

thinks

thinks I see them now more than ever. The duke and duchess took great pleasure in seeing the displeasure the good ecclesiastic suffered by the length and pauses of *Sancho's* tale; but *Don Quixote* was quite angry and vexed. I say then, quoth *Sancho*, that they both standing, as I have said, and just ready to sit down, the farmer disputed obstinately with the gentleman to take the upper-end of the table, and the gentleman, with as much positiveness, pressed the farmer to take it, saying, he ought to command in his own house. But the countryman, piquing himself upon his civility and good-breeding, would by no means sit down, 'till the gentleman, in a fret, laying both his hands upon the farmer's shoulders, made him sit down by main force, saying: Sit thee down, chaff-threshing churl; for, let me sit where I will, that is the upper-end to thee. This is my tale, and truly I believe it was brought in here pretty much to the purpose.

The natural brown of *Don Quixote's* face was speckled with a thousand colours. The duke and duchess dissembled their laughter, that *Don Quixote* might not be quite abashed, he having understood *Sancho's* slyness: and, to wave the discourse, and prevent *Sancho's* running into more impertinencies, the duchess asked *Don Quixote* what news he had of the lady *Dulcinea*, and whether he had lately sent her any presents of giants or caitifs, since he must certainly have vanquished a great many. To which *Don Quixote* answered: My misfortunes, madam, though they have had a beginning, will never have an end. Giants I have conquered, and caitifs, and have sent several; but where should they find her, if she be enchanted, and transformed into the ugliest country-wench that can be imagined? I know not, quoth *Sancho Pança*; to me she appeared the most beautiful creature in the world: at least, in activity, or a certain spring she has with her, I am sure she will not yield the advantage to a tumbler. In good faith, lady duchess, she bounces from the ground upon an ass as if she were a cat. Have you seen her enchanted, *Sancho*? quoth the duke. Seen her? answered *Sancho*: who the devil but

but I was the first that hit upon the knack of enchanting her? She is as much enchanted as my father.

The ecclesiastic, when he heard talk of giants, caitifs, and enchantments, began to suspect, that this must be *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, whose history the duke was commonly reading; and he had as frequently reproved him for so doing, telling him it was extravagance to read such extravagancies: and, being assured of the truth of his suspicion, with much choler he said to the duke: Your excellency, Sir, shall give an account to god for what this good man is doing. This *Don Quixote*, or *Don Coxcomb*, or how do you call him, I fancy, can hardly be so great an ideot as your excellency would have him, laying occasions in his way to go on in his follies and extravagancies. And, turning the discourse to *Don Quixote*, he said: And you, stupid wretch¹, who has thrust it into your brain, that you are a knight-errant, and that you conquer giants and seize caitifs? Be gone in a good hour, and in such this is said to you; return to your own house, and breed up your children, if you have any; mind your affairs, and cease to ramble up and down the world, sucking the wind, and making all people laugh that know you, or know you not. Where, with a mischief, have you ever found, that there have been, or are, knights-errant? Where are there any giants in *Spain*, or caitifs in *La Mancha*, or *Dulcineas* enchanted, or all the rabble rout of follies that are told of you? *Don Quixote* was very attentive to the words of this venerable man; and, finding that he now held his peace, without minding the respect due to the duke and duchefs, with an ireful mien, and disturbed countenance, he started up, and said—But his answer deserves a chapter by itself.

C H A P.

¹ Literally, *soul of a pitcher*.

C H A P. XV.

Of the answer Don Quixote gave to his reprover, with other grave and pleasant events.

DON QUIXOTE, thus standing up, and trembling from head to foot, as if he had quicksilver in his joints, with precipitate and disturbed speech, said : The place where I am, and the presence of the personages before whom I stand, together with the respect I ever had, and have, for men of your profession, restrain and tie up the hands of my just indignation : and therefore, as well upon the account of what I have said, as being conscious of what every body knows, that the weapons of gownmen are the same as those of women, their tongues, I will enter with mine into equal combat with your reverence, from whom one rather ought to have expected good counsels, than opprobrious revilings. Pious and well-meant reproof demands another kind of behaviour and language ; at least the reproving me in public, and so rudely, has passed all the bounds of decent reprehension : for it is better to begin with mildness than asperity, and it is not right, without knowledge of the fault, without more ado to call the offender madman and idiot. Tell me, I beseech your reverence, for which of the follies you have seen in me, do you condemn and revile me, bidding me get me home, and take care of my house, and of my wife and children, without knowing whether I have either ? What, is there no more to do but to enter boldly into other men's houses, to govern the masters ; and shall a poor pedagogue, who never saw more of the world than what is contained within a district of twenty or thirty leagues, set himself at random to prescribe laws to chivalry, and to judge of knights-errant ? Is it then an idle scheme, and time thrown away, to range the world, not seeking its delights, but its austerities, whereby good men aspire to the seat of immortality ? If gentlemen, if persons of wealth, birth, and quality were to take me for a madman,

man, I should look upon it as an irreparable affront: but to be esteemed a fool by pedants, who never entered upon, or trod the paths of chivalry, I value it not a farthing. A knight I am, and a knight I will die, if it be heaven's good-will. Some pass through the spacious field of proud ambition; others through that of servile and base flattery; others by the way of deceitful hypocrisy; and some by that of true religion: but I, by the influence of my star, take the narrow path of knight errantry, for the exercise whereof I despise wealth, but not honour. I have redressed grievances, righted wrongs, chastised insolencies, vanquished giants, and trampled upon hobgoblins: I am in love, but only because knights-errant must be so; and, being so, I am no vitious lover, but a chaste *Platonic* one. My intentions are always directed to virtuous ends, to do good to all, and hurt to none. Whether he, who means thus, acts thus, and lives in the practice of all this, deserves to be called a fool, let your grandeurs judge, most excellent duke and dukes.

Well said, i'faith! quoth *Sancho*: say no more in vindication of yourself, good my lord and master; for there is no more to be said, nor to be thought, nor to be persevered in, in the world: and besides, this gentleman denying, as he has denied, that there ever were, or are, knights-errant, no wonder if he knows nothing of what he has been talking of. Peradventure, quoth the ecclesiastic, you, brother, are that *Sancho Pança* they talk of, to whom your master has promised an island. I am so, answered *Sancho*, and am he who deserves one as well as any other *he* whatever. I am one of those, of whom they say, Associate with good men, and thou wilt be one of them; and of those, of whom it is said again; Not with whom thou wert bred, but with whom thou hast fed; and, He that leaneth against a good tree, a good shelter findeth he. I have leaned to a good master, and have kept him company these many months, and shall be such another as he, if it be god's good pleasure; and if he lives, and I live, neither shall he want kingdoms to rule, nor I islands to govern. That you shall not,
friend

friend *Sancho*, said the duke; for, in the name of Signor *Don Quixote*, I promise you the government of one of mine, now vacant, and of no inconsiderable value. Kneel, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, and kiss his excellency's feet for the favour he has done you. *Sancho* did so. Which the ecclesiastic seeing, he got up from table in a great pet, saying; By the habit I wear, I could find in my heart to say, your excellency is as simple as these sinners: what wonder if they are mad, since wise men authorize their follies? Your excellency may stay with them, if you please; but, while they are in the house, I will stay in my own, and save myself the trouble of reproving what I cannot remedy. And, without saying a word, or eating a bit more, away he went, the intreaties of the duke and duchess not availing to stop him; though indeed the duke said not much, through laughter, occasioned by his impertinent passion. The laugh being over, he said to *Don Quixote*: Sir knight of the lions, you have answered so well for yourself, that there remains nothing to demand satisfaction for in this case: for, though it has the appearance of an affront, it is by no means such, since, as women cannot give an affront, so neither can an ecclesiastic, as you better know. It is true, answered *Don Quixote*, and the reason is, that whoever cannot be affronted, neither can he give an affront to any body. Women, children, and churchmen, as they cannot defend themselves, though they are offended, so they cannot be affronted, because, as your excellency better knows, there is this difference between an injury and an affront: An affront comes from one, who can give it, does give it, and then maintains it; an injury may come from any hand, without affronting: as for example: A person stands carelessly in the street: ten others armed fall upon him, and beat him: he claps his hand to his sword, as he ought to do: but the number of his adversaries hinder him from effecting his intention, which is, to revenge himself: this person is injured, but not affronted. Another example will confirm the same thing: A man stands with his back turned: another comes

comes and strikes him with a cudgel, and runs for it when he has done: the man pursues him, and cannot overtake him: he, who received the blows, received an injury, but no affront, because the affront must be maintained. If he, who struck him, though he did it basely and unawares, draws his sword afterward, and stands firm, facing his enemy, he, who was struck, was both injured and affronted; injured, because he was struck treacherously, and affronted, because he, who struck him, maintained what he had done by standing his ground, and not stirring a foot. And therefore, according to the established laws of duel, I may be injured, but not affronted: for women and children cannot resent, nor can they fly, nor stand their ground. The same may be said of men consecrated to holy orders: for these three sorts of people want offensive and defensive weapons; and, though they are naturally bound to defend themselves, yet are they not to offend any body. So that, though I said before, I was injured, I now say, in no wise; for he, who cannot receive an affront, can much less give one. For which reasons I neither ought, nor do resent what that good man said to me: only I could have wished he had staid a little longer, that I might have convinced him of his error in thinking and saying, that there are no knights-errant now, nor ever were any in the world: for had *Amadis*, or any one of his numerous descendants, heard this, I am persuaded, it would not have fared over well with his reverence. That I will swear, quoth *Sancho*: they would have given him such a slash, as would have cleft him from top to bottom, like any pomegranate or over-ripe melon: they were not folks to be jested with in that manner. By my beads, I am very certain, had *Reynaldos* of *Montalvan* heard the little gentleman talk at that rate, he would have given him such a gag, that he should not have spoken a word more in three years. Ay, ay, let him meddle with them, and see how he will escape out of their hands. The duchess was ready to die with laughter at hearing *Sancho* talk; and, in her opinion, she took him to be more ridiculous and more mad than

than his master, and there were several others at that time of the same mind.

At last *Don Quixote* was calm, and supper ended: and, at taking away the cloth, there entered four damsels; one with a silver ewer, another with a bason of silver also, a third with two fine clean towels over her shoulder, and the fourth tucked up to her elbows, and in her white hands (for doubtless they were white) a wash-ball of *Naples-soap*. She with the bason drew near, and, with a genteel air and assurance, clapped it under *Don Quixote's* beard; who, without speaking a word, and wondering at the ceremony, believed it to be the custom of that country to wash beards instead of hands, and therefore stretched out his own as far as he could: and instantly the ewer began to rain upon him, and the wash-ball-damsel hurried over his beard with great dexterity of hand, raising great flakes of snow (for the lathering was not less white) not only over the beard, but over the whole face and eyes, of the obedient knight, inasmuch that it made him shut them whether he would or no. The duke and duchess, who knew nothing of all this, were in expectation what this extraordinary lavation would end in. The barber-damsel, having raised a lather a handful high, pretended the water was all spent, and ordered the girl with the ewer to fetch more, telling her, Signor *Don Quixote* would stay 'till she came back. She did so, and *Don Quixote* remained the strangest and most ridiculous figure imaginable. All that were present, being many, beheld him, and seeing him with a neck half an ell long, more than moderately swarthy, his eyes shut, and his beard all in a lather, it was a great wonder, and a sign of great discretion, that they forbore laughing. The damsels concerned in the jest held down their eyes, not daring to look at their lord and lady; who were divided between anger and laughter, not knowing what to do, whether to chastise the girls for their boldness, or reward them for the pleasure they took in beholding *Don Quixote* in that pickle. At last the damsels of the ewer came, and they made
an

an end of washing *Don Quixote*, and then she, who carried the towels, wiped and dried him with much deliberation; and all four at once, making him a profound reverence, were going off. But the duke, that *Don Quixote* might not smell the jest, called the damsel with the bason, saying: Come, and wash me too, and take care you have water enough. The arch and diligent wench came, and clapped the bason to the duke's chin, as she had done to *Don Quixote's*, and very expeditiously washed and lathered him well, and, leaving him clean and dry, they made their curtsies, and away they went. It was afterwards known, that the duke had sworn, that, had they not washed him, as they did *Don Quixote*, he would have punished them for their pertness, which they had discreetly made amends for by serving him in the same manner. *Sancho* was very attentive to the ceremonies of this washing, and said to himself: God be my guide! is it the custom, trow, of this place, to wash the beards of squires as well as of knights? On my conscience and soul, I need it much; and, if they should give me a stroke of a razor, I should take it for a still greater favour. What are you saying to yourself, *Sancho*? quoth the duchess. I say, madam, answered *Sancho*, that, in other princes courts, I have always heard say, when the cloth is taken away, they bring water to wash hands, and not suds to scour beards; and therefore one must live long, to see much: it is also said, he who lives a long life, must pass through many evils; though one of these same scourings is rather a pleasure than a pain. Take no care, friend *Sancho*, quoth the duchess; for I will order my damsels to wash you too, and lay you a bucking, if need be. For the present, I shall be satisfied, as to my beard, answered *Sancho*: for the rest, god will provide hereafter. Hark you, sewer, said the duchess, mind what honest *Sancho* desires, and do precisely as he would have you. The sewer answered, that Signor *Sancho* should be punctually obeyed; and so away he went to dinner, and took *Sancho* with him, the duke and duchess

chefs remaining at table with *Don Quixote*, discoursing of sundry and divers matters, but all relating to the profession of arms and knight-errantry.

The duchess intreated *Don Quixote*, since he seemed to have so happy a memory, that he would delineate and describe the beauty and features of the lady *Dulcinea del Toboso*; for, according to what fame proclaimed of her beauty, she took it for granted, she must be the fairest creature in the world, and even in all *La Mancha*. *Don Quixote* sighed at hearing the duchess's request, and said: If I could pull out my heart, and lay it before your grandeur's eyes here upon the table in a charger, I might save my tongue the labour of telling what can hardly be conceived: for there your excellency would see her pourtrayed to the life. But why should I go about to delineate and describe, one by one, the perfections of the peerless *Dulcinea*, it being a burthen fitter for other shoulders than mine, an enterprize worthy to employ the pencils of *Parrhasius*, *Timantes*, and *Apelles*, and the graving-tools of *Lysippus*, to paint and carve in pictures, marbles, and bronzes; and *Ciceronian* and *Demosthenian* rhetoric, to praise them. What is the meaning of *Demosthenian*, Signor *Don Quixote*? quoth the duchess: it is a word I never heard in all the days of my life. *Demosthenian* rhetoric, answered *Don Quixote*, is as much as to say, the rhetoric of *Demosthenes*, as *Ciceronian* of *Cicero*; who were the two greatest orators and rhetoricians in the world. That is true, said the duke, and you betrayed your ignorance in asking such a question: but for all that, Signor *Don Quixote* would give us a great deal of pleasure in painting her to us; for though it be but a rough draught or sketch only, doubtless she will appear such as the most beautiful may envy. So she would most certainly, answered *Don Quixote*, had not the misfortune, which lately befel her, blotted her idea out of my mind; such a misfortune, that I am in a condition rather to bewail, than to describe her: for your grandeurs must know, that going, a few days ago, to kiss her hands, and receive her benediction,

diction, commands, and licence for this third sally, I found her quite another person than her I sought for. I found her enchanted, and converted from a princess into a country-wench, from beautiful to ugly, from an angel to a devil, from fragrant to pestiferous, from courtly to rustic, from light to darkness, from a sober lady to a jumping *Joan*¹; and, in fine, from *Dulcinea del Toboso*, to a clownish wench of *Sayago*². God be my aid, cried the duke at this instant with a loud voice: who may it be that has done so much mischief to the world? who is it that has deprived it of the beauty that cheered it, the good humour that entertained it, and the modesty that did it honour? Who? answered *Don Quixote*: who could it be, but some malicious enchanter, of the many invisible ones that persecute me; that cursed race, born into the world to obscure and annihilate the exploits of the good, and to brighten and exalt the actions of the wicked. Enchanters have hitherto persecuted me; enchanters still persecute me; and enchanters will continue to persecute me 'till they have tumbled me and my lofty chivalries into the profound abyss of oblivion: and they hurt and wound me in the most sensible part; since to deprive a knight-errant of his mistress, is to deprive him of the eyes he sees with, the sun that enlightens him, and the food that sustains him. I have already often said it, and now repeat it, that a knight-errant without a mistress is like a tree without leaves, a building without cement, and a shadow without a body that causes it. There is no more to be said, quoth the duchess: but for all that, if we are to believe the history of Signor *Don Quixote*, lately published with the general applause of all nations, we are to collect from thence, if I remember right, that your worship never saw the lady *Dulcinea*, and that there is no such lady in the world, she being only an imaginary lady begotten and born of your own brain, and dressed out with all the graces and perfections

you

¹ Alluding to her jumping upon the ass.

² Of the territory of *Zamora*. The phrase is applied to poor people in general.

you pleased. There is a great deal to be said on this subject, answered *Don Quixote* : God knows whether there be a *Dulcinea* or not in the world, and whether she be imaginary or not imaginary : this is one of those things, the proof whereof is not to be too nicely inquired into. I neither begot nor brought forth my mistress, though I contemplate her as a lady endowed with all those qualifications, which may make her famous over the whole world ; such as, the being beautiful without a blemish, grave without pride, amorous with modesty, obliging as being courteous, and courteous as being well-bred ; and finally of high descent, because beauty shines and displays itself with greater degrees of perfection, when matched with noble blood, than in subjects that are of mean extraction. True, quoth the duke : but Signor *Don Quixote* must give me leave to say what the history of his exploits forces me to speak : for from thence may be gathered, that, supposing it be allowed that there is a *Dulcinea* in *Toboso*, or out of it, and that she is beautiful in the highest degree, as your worship describes her to us, yet, in respect of high descent, she is not upon a level with the *Orianas*, the *Alastrajareas*, *Madafimas*, and others of that sort, of whom histories are full, as your worship well knows. To this I can answer, replied *Don Quixote*, that *Dulcinea* is the daughter of her own works, that virtue ennobles blood, and that a virtuous person, tho' mean, is more to be valued than a vicious person of quality. Besides, *Dulcinea* has endowments, which may raise her to be a queen with crown and scepter ; for the merit of a beautiful virtuous woman extends to the working greater miracles, and, though not formally, yet virtually she has in herself greater advantages in store. I say, Signor *Don Quixote*, cried the duchess, that you tread with great caution, and, as the saying is, with the plummet in hand ; and for my own part henceforward I will believe, and make all my family believe, and even my lord duke, if need be, that there is a *Dulcinea* in *Toboso*, and that she is this day living and beautiful, and especially well-born, and well-deserving that such a knight as Signor *Don Quixote* should be her servant ;

which is the highest commendation I can bestow upon her. But I cannot forbear entertaining one scruple, and bearing I know not what grudge to *Sancho Pança*. The scruple is : the aforesaid history relates, that the said *Sancho Pança* found the said lady *Dulcinea*, when he carried her a letter from your worship, winnowing a sack of wheat ; by the same token it says it was red : which makes me doubt the highness of her birth. To which *Don Quixote* answered : Madam, your grandeur must know, that most or all the things, which befall me, exceed the ordinary bounds of what happen to other knights errant, whether directed by the inscrutable will of the destinies, or ordered through the malice of some envious enchanter : and as it is already a thing certain, that, among all or most of the famous knights-errant, one is privileged from being subject to the power of enchantment ; another's flesh is so impenetrable that he cannot be wounded ; as was the case of the renowned *Orlando*, one of the twelve peers of *France*, of whom it is related that he was invulnerable, excepting in the sole of his left foot, and in that only by the point of a great pin, and by no other weapon whatever ; so that, when *Bernardo del Carpio* killed him in *Roncesvalles*, perceiving he could not wound him with steel, he hoisted him from the ground between his arms, and squeezed him to death, recollecting the manner in which *Hercules* slew *Antæus*, that fierce giant, who was said to be a son of the earth. I would infer from what I have said, that, perhaps, I may have some one of those privileges : not that of being invulnerable ; for experience has often shewn me, that I am made of tender flesh, and by no means impenetrable ; nor that of not being subject to enchantment ; for I have already found myself clapped into a cage, in which the whole world could never have been able to have shut me up, had it not been by force of enchantments : but, since I freed myself from thence, I am inclined to believe no other can touch me ; and therefore these enchanters, seeing they cannot practise their wicked artifices upon my person, revenge themselves upon what I love best, and have a mind to take away my life by evil entreating

Dulcinea,

Dulcinea, for whom I live ; and therefore I am of opinion, that, when my squire carried her my message, they had transformed her into a country-wench, busied in that mean employment of winnowing wheat. But I have before said, that the wheat was not red, nor indeed wheat, but grains of oriental pearl : and for proof hereof I must tell your grandeurs, that, coming lately through *Toboso*, I could not find *Dulcinea*'s palace ; and that, *Sancho* my squire having seen her the other day in her own proper figure, the most beautiful on the globe, to me she appeared a coarse ugly country wench, and not well-spoken, whereas she is discretion itself : and since I neither am, nor in all likelihood can be enchanted, it is she that is the enchanted, the injured, the metamorphosed and transformed : In her my enemies have revenged themselves on me, and for her I shall live in perpetual tears 'till I see her restored to her former state. All this I have said, that no stress may be laid upon what *Sancho* told of *Dulcinea*'s sifting and winnowing ; for since to me she was changed, no wonder if she was metamorphosed to him. *Dulcinea* is well-born, of quality, and of the genteel families of *Toboso*, which are many, ancient, and very good ; and no doubt the peerless *Dulcinea* has a large share in them, for whom her town will be famous and renowned in the ages to come, as *Troy* was for *Helen*, and *Spain* has been for *Cava*, though upon better grounds, and a juster title. On the other hand, I would have your grandeurs understand, that *Sancho Pança* is one of the most ingenious squires that ever served knight-errant : he has indeed, at times, certain simplicities so acute, that it is no small pleasure to consider whether he has in him most of the simple or acute : he has roguery enough to pass for a knave, and negligence enough to confirm him a dunce : he doubts of every thing, and believes every thing : when I imagine he is falling headlong into stupidity, he outs with such smart repartees as raise him to the skies. In short, I would not exchange him for any other squire, tho' a city were given me to boot : and therefore I am in doubt whether I shall do well to send him to the government your

grandeur has favoured him with ; though I perceive in him such a fitness for the business of governing, that, with a little polishing of his understanding, he would be as much master of that art, as the king is of his customs. Besides we know by sundry experiences, that there is no need of much ability, nor much learning, to be a governor ; for there are a hundred of them up and down that can scarcely read, and yet they govern as sharp as so many hawks. The main point is, that their intention be good, and that they desire to do every thing right, and there will never be wanting counsellors to advise and direct them in what they are to do ; like your governors, who, being sword-men, and not scholars, have an assistant on the bench. My counsel to him would be, All bribes to refuse, but insist on his dues ; with some other little matters, which lie in my breast, and shall out in proper time, for *Sancho's* benefit, and the good of the island he is to govern.

Thus far had the duke, the duchess, and *Don Quixote* proceeded in their discourse, when they heard several voices, and a great noise in the palace, and presently *Sancho* came into the hall all in a chase, with a dish-clout for a slabbering-bib ; and after him a parcel of kitchen-boys, and other lower servants. One of them carried a tray full of water, which, by its colour and uncleanness, seemed to be dish water. He followed and persecuted him, endeavouring with all earnestness to fix it under his chin ; and another scullion seemed as solicitous to wash his beard. What is the matter, brothers ? quoth the duchess ; what is the matter ? what would you do to this good man ? What ! do you not consider that he is a governor elect ? To which the roguish barber answered : Madam, this gentleman will not suffer himself to be washed, as is the custom, and as our lord the duke and his master have been. Yes, I will, answered *Sancho* in great wrath ; but I would have cleaner towels, and clearer suds, and not such filthy hands : for there is no such difference between me and my master, that he should be washed with angel-water, and I with the devil's lye. The customs of countries, and of princes palaces, are
so

so far good, as they are not troublesome : but this custom of scouring here is worse than that of the whipping penitents. My beard is clean, and I have no need of such refreshings ; and he, who offers to scour me, or touch a hair of my head (I mean of my beard) with due reverence be it spoken, I will give him such a dowse, that I will set my fist fast in his skull : for such ceremonies and soapings as these look more like jibes than courtesy to guests. The duchess was ready to die with laughing, to see the rage, and hear the reasonings, of *Sancho*. But *Don Quixote* was not over pleased, to see him so accoutered with the nasty towel, and surrounded with such a parcel of kitchen-tribe : and so making a low bow to the duke and duchess, as if begging leave to speak, he said to the rabble with a solemn voice : Gentlemen cavaliers, be pleased to let the young man alone, and return from whence you came, or to any other place you list ; for my squire is as clean as another man, and these trays are as painful to him as a narrow-necked jug. Take my advice, and let him alone ; for neither he nor I understand jesting. *Sancho* caught the words out of his master's mouth, and proceeded, saying : No, no, let them go on with their joke ; for I will endure it as much as it is now night. Let them bring hither a comb, or what else they please, and let them curry this beard, and if they find any thing in it that offends against cleanliness, let them shear me cross-wise.

Here the duchess, still laughing, said : *Sancho Pança* is in the right in whatever he has said, and will be so in whatever he shall say : he is clean, and, as he says, needs no washing ; and, if he is not pleased with our custom, he is at his own disposal¹ : and besides, you ministers of cleanliness have been extremely remiss and careless, and I may say presumptuous, in bringing to such a personage, and such a beard, your trays and dish clouts, instead of ewers and basons of pure gold, and towels of *Dutch* diaper : but, in short, you are a parcel of scoundrels and ill-born, and cannot forbear shewing the grudge you bear to the squires of knights-errant. The roguish servants, and even the
sewer

¹ Literally, *his soul is in his hand*.

fewer who came with them, believed that the duchess spoke in earnest, and so they took *Sancho's* dish-clout off his neck, and with some confusion and shame slunk away and left him: who, finding himself rid of what he thought an imminent danger, went and kneeled down before the duchess, and said: From great folks great favours are to be expected: that, which your ladyship has done me to-day, cannot be repayed with less than the desire of seeing myself dubbed a knight-errant, that I may employ all the days of my life in the service of so high a lady. A peasant I am; *Sancho Pança* is my name; married I am; children I have; and I serve as a squire: if with any one of these I can be serviceable to your grandeur, I shall not be slower in obeying, than your ladyship in commanding. It appears plainly, *Sancho*, answered the duchess, that you have learned to be courteous in the school of courtesy itself. I mean, it is evident, you have been bred in the bosom of Signor *Don Quixote*, who must needs be the cream of complaisance, and the flower of ceremony, or cirimony, as you say. Well fare such a master, and such a man, the one the pole-star of knight-errantry, and the other the bright luminary of squirely fidelity! Rise up, friend *Sancho*; for I will make you amends for your civility, by prevailing with my lord duke to perform, as soon as possible, the promise he has made you of the government.

Thus ended the conversation, and *Don Quixote* went to repose himself during the heat of the day, and the duchess desired *Sancho*, if he had not an inclination to sleep, to pass the afternoon with her and her damsels in a very cool hall. *Sancho* answered, that, though indeed he was wont to sleep four or five hours a-day, during the afternoon heats of the summer, to wait upon her goodness, he would endeavour with all his might not to sleep at all that day, and would be obedient to her commands; and so away he went. The duke gave fresh orders about treating *Don Quixote* as a knight-errant, without deviating a tittle from the stile, in which we read the knights of former times were treated.

The End of the THIRD VOLUME.



.
s
t
k
t
l
s
r
a
n
o
s
l
e
.
t
l
s
-
a
f
f
l
a
.
t
e
a
.
e
a
.